

# wHaT tHe LoRd HaS dOnE wltH mE

by Victor Nicholas Hafichuk

## *A Theo-autobiography*

---

### PART EIGHT – Day 888 to Victory

#### *Page 1*

##### Particle - Carnal and Spiritual Love

Sean and my wife, Marilyn, talked of how much and in what way they loved each other, a way, Marilyn declared, I'd never known. Yet I didn't see their love for each other or for anyone else.

I have long [preached](#) that the love the world talks about, the love of romance, sentiment, and feeling, is not the true or highest love to which God calls us and in which we must all walk at the cost of any other kind, such as love of family and friendship. To fall short of the highest love is to fall short of God, His glory, and His Kingdom.

The Greeks had specific words for these two loves, one being “phileo,” a love those in the world are capable of having for one another, it being predominantly a love of emotion and feelings. The other is “agape,” the spiritual love no person possesses without the grace of God. This love is one of unselfish will for another. It is not one of feelings or sentiment, but one of determination, a matter of will. The *agape* love is not reactive only, but proactive.

Satan and his children have *phileo* (they can do no better), but God and His children deal in the realm of *agape*. I noted how Jesus was somehow different after the resurrection toward His disciples than before. After the resurrection, He seemed more distant or almost detached. Yet His Spirit, compassion, and motivation were true and perfectly dependable. His love was not what He felt, but what He willed. His love was of Heaven and not of this world. (I'm not saying He didn't have this highest love before He was resurrected, only that He was constrained by the human nature and was compelled to live with human characteristics, such as *phileo* love, which is legitimate, in and of itself.)

##### Particle - Low and Lofty Love

Marriage among men and women is in *phileo* love, if not in an even lower form of love the Greeks call “eros,” one predominantly sensual, as with animals. The marriage supper of the Lamb, however, is one of *agape* love. That is why Jesus said that in Heaven (the spiritual realm, as opposed to the carnal realm), they neither marry nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels.

In Ephesians 5:25-33, husbands are called upon to lay their lives down for their wives (*agape* love). When man enters the Kingdom of God (the spiritual realm), he is called on to live in *agape*, not in emotion or lust or affection, but in sacrificial love. Wives, however, aren't called upon to live that

way, according to the Scriptures. Titus 2:4 calls for wives to love their husbands in the sense of being affectionate (G5362 - *philandros*), this being the only reference to wives loving their husbands.

Still, in Christ, wives love with a spiritual love for, in Christ, there is neither male nor female. As Christ laid down His life for His congregation, His Body, His Bride and Wife known as the Church, so the husband lays down his life for his wife. As the Bride of Christ is thus moved by her Husband to lay down her life for others in *agape* love, so the wife of the man is moved to reciprocal *agape*, not only for the husband, but for all.

### Particle - Satan's Spurious Salvation

The world loves its own, but it hates the Lord and those walking with Him. This is partly because those who walk with Him don't dwell in the realm of affection or worldly religious motivation. True believers don't go to church in search of emotional good times or uplifting, which counterfeit believers call "spiritual." The believer's basis of life is the truth, not good feelings; *agape* love, not *phileo* love; faith, not willpower; service to, and appreciation of, God, not gratification of his senses or one of heroics.

Satan presumes to "save" man in his unconverted state and keep him in the world, even if he calls himself a Christian. Jesus said to Peter, "When you are converted..." Peter only knew *phileo* love (John 21:15-19; Luke 22:32-34). What would Satan seek to accomplish in sifting Peter? It would not be destroying his carnal man, but influencing him to trust in the earthly realm, to "serve God" in the unconverted state, in *phileo* love.

Before Peter could be God's vessel of ministry, he had to overcome to the place of *agape* love. He was converted at Pentecost when receiving the Spirit and was turned into another man, from weakness to strength, fear to boldness, denial to declaration, flesh to spirit, first Adam to Last Adam, *phileo* to *agape*, from faith to faith.

### Particle - A Flood of False Faith

Today, many profess to be born again, and one cannot tell many of them otherwise. Who is in error? Was I wrongfully critical or skeptical of their claims, or is there a deceptive, treacherous mixture, as in Noah's day, which now has no remedy except a fearful, fiery cleansing? These people use the right words and definitions, but I only hear **words**. I see religiosity, custom, affectation, hypocrisy, lukewarmness, and contradiction, but I don't see **fruits**.

How can one be born again, yet speak against the gifts of the Spirit? How can one have the Spirit of Truth, yet celebrate pagan holidays, especially Christmas, Easter, and Halloween? How can God-fearing people continue in religious systems contrary to the ways of the Lord? How can they be so contrary to the Bible and its doctrines? How can they love the world so? James declares that friendship with the world is enmity with God (James 4:4).

### Particle - Jonathan's Frailty Fails

I often saw Jonathan's physical frailties manifest, and it bothered me. I recalled the [prophecy](#), "*and you will miss him when he's gone.*" Would the Lord take him in frailty before we go? Would we lose him?

This torment was not of God. “He is in Your hands, Lord, and You have blessed him with Your gifts and powers, with Your life. Is that not good?”

(In 2015, years after these concerns, Jonathan is a strong, healthy man, apart from the recreational injuries he often suffers doing parkour and free running.)

### Particle - Experiencing Lois' Vision

There are four possible levels of existence I know of on this earth, with many levels within these levels. First is the heathen state where multitudes dwell, where I dwelt until 1973. A search was put in me to go higher. Searching, I was granted repentance of sin, the second dimension. I thought, “This is it! How wonderful!”

And it surely was wonderful, but this second level wasn't enough. A small voice within me was saying, “You're not where you need to be yet; there's more.” Searching for more, this time with my newly-wed wife, Marilyn, we were baptized in the Spirit, this becoming the third dimension or level.

As in the entrance to repentance, the Bible again became a new book, but on a new and deeper level of understanding. It was glorious! But upon entering in, as wonderful as it was, with the increased knowledge and understanding of God, we soon realized there was more, and there were others to urge us on. So I kept going, waiting, hoping, searching to the day of this record, a quarter century later.

Now there were indications I'd entered a new dimension, as per [Lois' vision](#), one with a throne. This was that 4<sup>th</sup> dimension, the Feast of Tabernacles, the overcoming, the rest, the unveiling, presence, and manifestation of the Lord - more commonly called the Second Coming. I would even liken it to what many believe of the state of a rapture. Yes, I'd been “raptured.”

### Particle - Coming or Going

Feeling chest pains and shortness of breath, I wondered if I wasn't, in fact, leaving this world after all. Lois and Marilyn urged me to see the doctor, so I drove from home to emergency while they drove in from the farm to meet me. The doctor examined me and found nothing wrong with my heart. Strange how those who seemed to want me to leave this realm still wanted me to receive medical care! I went. You know what it was? A pulled muscle in the chest. And you know what caused it? Laughing! I was so out of shape!

Then Marilyn had a message in tongues and interpretation: *“Rejoice and give thanks. Watch what I will do. Set your eyes on the Lord and not on the things of this world.”*

### Particle - Lois' Dream: Reconciliation

In the night of March 13-14, 1999, in a dream, Lois saw a wall of fire, and in front of the fire were two hands shaking, as in friendship. One hand or arm was bare while the other had a sleeve showing. To me this spoke of reconciliation in the fire, making of two one new man. I saw the dream as a present occurrence and the breakthrough I'd spoken about.

### Particle - No Sweet Shipment for Schussler

[John Schussler](#)'s saskatoon berry business appeared to be thriving. On the other hand, he reported to us that someone had sent a truck up from the southern states to pick up a shipment of jam at his facilities while he was away. There went an unauthorized \$70,000 of jam, according to him. John said that some time later, he found the jam selling in a retail outlet in the US, for which he never saw a penny. Other significant problems arose as well. Was this the judgment of God on deceptive marketing practices? Where would it end? We would see.

### **Particle - Marilyn's Vision: Coming into Light**

On March 15, 1999, 900 days after [Marilyn's prophecy](#), she had a vision of us in our tiny community coming out of a dark, closed place into a broad, open space with light.

### **Particle - Agonizing and Aching About Archie**

One does not get socially, intimately, and emotionally involved with anyone for years without effect, especially evident when a parting of ways comes. To me, it was tragic the way Archie and his family had to leave and were robbed of what I envisioned to be potential wonderful blessings. If only they could have believed and endured to the end. While I could do nothing about their unbelief, I was bothered about some things I could have done something about, or so I supposed.

Archie resented many things, one of those being that, by his estimation, I had sold our 1987 Ford LTD car to him for too much. It bothered me that I had passed a Charles Givens financial package on to him for a few hundred dollars instead of returning it for fear I would not receive a refund. Archie claimed it paid for itself, but it still bothered me that I had the idea of using him to cover myself. I wondered if I shouldn't compensate him.

In discussing my thoughts and feelings with others, Marilyn was angry that I should entertain any notions of giving him anything. "We once gave him a car, paid for plates and insurance, and we paid off their credit cards. Why did he never complain about or remember that?" she objected. Lois declared that all Archie could ever think of was what they could get from us. They also reminded me that, had Archie been open and honest, things would be very different for them and between us. All of this was true; I couldn't argue.

I left things, concluding there was nothing under God that was required of me, but I was never to be satisfied until something more happened or was done somehow. Lois received that I would be doing the right thing by them.

### **Particle - Too Hefty for Hephers**

Rob and Corinne Hepher made an appointment to come and visit us at Harvest Haven. They were new customers interested in eating properly. We met on March 21, 1999. Lois had a Word for them, saying that they were perishing (which they were, spiritually) and that Rob had a hearing ear.

I was expecting good things of them, even thinking I had heard they would be the firstfruits of a general spiritual, corporate turnaround with us. However, while Rob seemed positive in the visit, Corinne was resisting. In following up, it turned out they didn't like to hear what we had to say to them. They felt there was "a heavy" with us, that we were "controlling."

"You're too serious," they said. "We've never met people like you." They decided they wanted no part of us. People are so unaccustomed to, and fearful of, sober spiritual discipline. What, is Christianity all about wonderful feelings, fun, and games? What about denying self, forsaking all,

dealing with sin, taking up the cross, sobriety, vigilance, discipline, correction, persecution, and even martyrdom?

I was troubled by the Hephers' rejection, as usual, until the Lord told me that their trouble was that I had spoken with authority, which they hated. Lois said Corinne "wore the pants" in the marriage, and I knew that was true, not only with them, but with married couples in general. Men prefer wives' authority to God's. I told Rob he needed to forsake his wife.

### **Particle - Miyuki's Failure in Faith**

I wrote [Miyuki](#) on March 19, 1999:

You phoned asking for prayer, saying you were going to give your notice at work. I tried even then to encourage you and did not feel at that time that it was too late for your decision, though it seemed late and you were halting. Now Mark has written on March 9<sup>th</sup>, expressing frustration, saying he had been talking to you the night before and had been angry with you. You apparently had no faith whatsoever and were in terrible shape. You said your health was deteriorating and that your family was in tears, distressed.

Yes, you had a house, debt, family to support, and no other income. That is what the Lord is all about. How can He prove Himself as a Savior to you with situations possible for us to handle? How can He answer your prayer or request, as stated above, if you are able to trust in things other than Him? Faith is not about having other things to fall back on if we forsake something. And "without faith, it is impossible to please God," say the Scriptures.

You wrote me on November 22<sup>nd</sup>, asking if the Lord wanted you to quit the job "right now." I thought that it should be clear. In that letter you said, "There's nothing to ask you about the message anymore. I know what I should do." So I decided that you understood and that it was now only a matter of doing.

Days went by which turned into weeks, months, which now turn into more months. I believe that even if I weren't clear as to when you should quit, in faith you would act and not hesitate; in unbelief, you would falter.

Miyuki, in praying in the last few days concerning this matter, I received that you have already disobeyed in that you delayed instead of giving "the shortest notice allowable to your employer." Because of fear and unbelief, the children of Israel could not enter into the promised land when they had opportunity. The Lord thus turned them back into the wilderness. I do not believe that if you were to quit now, it would be profitable to either you or to the Lord. In fact, without faith, I suspect it would be disastrous, though the Lord still provides, one way or another.

I believe that if you had obeyed, you would have received all you had asked for and more. I believe you can talk to your employer, remain working, and request a different arrangement whereby you can have time with Ruth, as they offered you, and perhaps receive some other changes suitable for you and your family.

You had asked that we pray for Ruth, your mother, aunt, and family. I realize, now that I re-read your Nov. 22<sup>nd</sup> letter, that you were somehow taking your family with you, that you expected them to believe with you, to somehow understand, even if in limited ways or degrees. When the Lord calls one, He calls that one alone, even as with Abraham, Jacob,

Joseph, and so many others. It's you and God, nobody else. He takes care of everybody else and expects you to come alone, stripped of everything and everyone.

It isn't our righteousness, Miyuki. The way we find that out is when the Lord requires of us difficult, if not impossible, things and we discover that unless we have faith, we can't do it (obey). When the spies of Israel returned from searching out Canaan, they said, "The land is a wonderful land, very fruitful, but we can't do it, we can't take the land; the enemy is too big and strong."

The children of Israel were afraid and wept; they murmured against the Lord and against Moses and Aaron. They decided they would rather go back to Egypt, to the old life. The Lord was angry and said to them, "Therefore you will not be entering that land I promised you. Your children will, but you won't" (Numbers 13 and 14).

Did the Lord cast them off entirely, then? No. He provided them with all the necessities in a wilderness where there was no other provision. Their clothes and their shoes never wore out in forty years. They fought armies of enemies and were victorious. In a wilderness of heat and drought, a million and a half people or more survived for forty years along with their livestock. They had all they needed in shelter, clothing, food, water, and security from enemies, disease, and a hostile environment.

Most importantly, God was with them and He was still their God, though that first generation could not enter the promised land, but perished in the wilderness. His miraculous provision testified against their unbelief.

Every one of us discovers that Christ is our righteousness and we have none of our own. We only think we do.

These are not tall tales, Miyuki, but Scriptural fact, recorded for our sakes. You have been exposed for who you are... a phony, insincere unbeliever, prizing your own life, favouring yourself and not God, making a show of faith in God, yet not having faith. And so must it be for me and all of us - we must fail and see ourselves as we really are.

Even Abraham faltered when having sexual relations with Sarah's handmaid, Hagar, to have a son by his own strength, rather than by trusting God. He also lied to Pharaoh to preserve himself, not trusting God to protect him, and repeated that very same deed with Abimelech as though he had never learned or grown spiritually. But he also had his victories and is now known as our father in faith, the father of many nations. In the final analysis or observation, he overcame in the Lord, though he was weak, as are we. He believed, and it was counted to him for righteousness.

Do not quit your job. That option is not now available to you.

Miyuki replied, distressed, as expected, but there was nothing to be done.

### **Particle - Bob's Three Idols**

On March 24<sup>th</sup>, I was moved to write a letter to [Bob Fife](#) and tell him I saw three gods in his life with which he needed to deal. Food, a ministry to homosexuals, and his son, Sean, for whom he seemed to have an inordinate affection. The latter was not a physical thing, but a carnal connection that seemed too important to him in relation to God. As expected, he didn't reply on



these matters, which I was seeing and hearing when he visited us. Bob loved his food and was quite obese. He spoke of an outreach to homosexuals and of his great love for his son. All these appeared disproportionate to his relationship to the Lord.

### **Particle - God's Gold for Man's Mercury?**

Dick Deweert and those at The Miracle Channel were claiming to miraculously receive gold fillings replacing amalgams. I asked the Lord (not that I didn't already strongly suspect, but I wanted to be sure), "Father, is this of You?"

He immediately replied, "*Are they with you?*" I knew the answer to that one. Those "miracles" were the "signs and lying wonders" of the man of sin, the first Adam.

### **Particle - No End to Troubles and Faults**

I was finding myself still falling far short of godliness. We held a garage sale at Marj Tennant's to get rid of unwanted goods. I found myself trying to get as much as I could for the goods, exaggerating and passing on information of which I wasn't absolutely sure. Oh, the covetous, selfish heart! Lord! When? When would I love you and neighbor as myself?

### **Particle - An Inguinal Hernia for Jonathan**

Jonathan had an inguinal hernia for a few years and finally it was troubling him, so we decided he needed another operation (the first being his circumcision). An appointment is slated. Why did the Lord not take care of it without the scalpel? I don't know. He hadn't done it with Jonathan's eczema or his circumcision. Was it lack of faith? I don't believe so, but I can't say I really know. He had his operation May 10, 1999. It wouldn't be his last.

### **Particle - The Horse and Cart**

To say, "I believe God is in me because the Bible says so," is vain and legalistic. To say, "I believe the Bible because God is in me," is a natural, unspoken reality. The former easily entertains doubt and faltering, whereas the latter is a foundation of rock, and the Lord is that Rock and the Alpha. The Bible originates with Him, not He with the Bible. To say otherwise is to worship the Bible, not God.

Another example: Some say that one must believe in the virgin birth to be a true believer. I say that as a true believer, one will believe in the virgin birth, but it isn't necessary to believe in the virgin birth to be a believer. To say otherwise is to be dependent on externals, which is counterfeit to the reality. Who of all the believers in the Scriptures believed in the virgin birth? How about Zacchaeus, Saul of Tarsus, Nicodemus, and so many, if not all, others? There's no indication any of these knew Jesus was born of a virgin, and it wasn't an issue of faith for salvation.

These thoughts were provoked when reading *The Handwriting of God* by Grant Jeffrey. He criticized Emil Brunner, whom he called a "modern, liberal theologian," who seemed to be saying what I'm saying here. Jeffrey doesn't understand and thus goes on to falsely denounce Brunner as a non-Christian who denies the "original" orthodox Christian, Biblical faith.

If I only went by the words Jeffrey quoted of Brunner, I would have to say it was Brunner who had the genuine Christian experience. Jeffrey certainly didn't have it. He depended on the Bible, not on God. To eat directly from the Bible is to eat of the Tree of Knowledge, which brings death. It is

an act of independence from God; it is trusting in one's own understanding and power for salvation.

Grant Jeffrey died of cardiac arrest at age 63.

### **Particle - Honesty the Antidote for Deception**

A wonderful revelation! How does the Lord protect us from liars? He does so by keeping us honest!

"A wicked-doer gives heed to false lips; a liar gives ear to an evil tongue" (Proverbs 17:4 MKJV).

"The getting of treasures by a lying tongue is a vanity tossed to and fro by those who seek death" (Proverbs 21:6 MKJV).

"Lying lips are an abomination to the LORD, but those who do the truth are His delight" (Proverbs 12:22 HNV).

### **Particle - Confronting Casey and Company**

Because there was some conflict and misunderstanding with the [Overbeek](#) children, I decided to talk to [Casey](#). Again, I told him, "You mock God in all your ways. You run around 'ministering' to the youth, etc., but your own family is ignored." I told him that I appreciated the effect his brother, George, had on Jamie by giving him attention, that Jamie and Kalista were ignored and neglected by them, and that Kalista's countenance had so lit up when we lent her a bike.

I chastised them for believing their children's lies instead of coming to us for both sides of the story. (I said these things to them primarily because they professed faith in Christ, yet lived lives so contrary to Him and the counsel of the Scriptures.)

"Victor, I tell you now, the reason we stayed away from you is because you are so critical."

"Yes, I am critical," I answered.

"If you enjoy it, fine!" he replied.

"No, I don't enjoy it," I said, "but I have to speak up. They saw the prophets as critical and stoned them. The Bible says to reprove the works of darkness. Isaiah was told to tell the people their sins. You are to leave your gift at the altar when your neighbor has something against you, but no, you pretend there's nothing wrong. Is that right? Your children are liars because you (the parents) are liars."

"Kids do things.... Shrug it off.... Kids will be kids," he said.

I replied, "No, you don't shrug it off. You face it and deal with it."

"Well, if it works for me, fine," he retorted.

I said, "It isn't working for you. You've reaped consequences and you'll reap more."

"That's fine," he said.



I said, “No, it isn’t fine. You need to repent. God isn’t condemning you and I don’t condemn you, but it won’t go well for you if you don’t repent.”

“We’re not going to do things just because Victor told us,” he said. There were other things said, and then he hung up on me.

### **Particle - New Neighbors**

We didn’t win a popularity contest with the [Arnoldussens](#). The Overbeeks decided to agree with them after living next to us. Now Overbeeks were gone and we had new neighbors, the Den Hertogs, Chris and Wilma. So far, it was three Dutch families, all Reform, and all religious. Would these also have a problem with me? Likely. We were hoping for, and expecting, better things.

### **Particle - I Hate Marilyn**

I confessed to Marilyn a few years before that I hated her. I confessed it again on April 7, 1999. The thought of her [choosing](#) me now over Sean was abhorrent to me; I wouldn’t want it. I think I hated her for two reasons: She had rejected me for someone else (which makes me childish at least and anti-Christ at most); and she had been domineering our lives and marriage. How free I felt at home without her! I realized she had always “worn the pants.” Who but a fool could argue with that? And I didn’t have any interest in laying down my life for anyone, least of all for her.

I awoke on April 8<sup>th</sup>, realizing that in the night, the Lord ministered to me, reminding me that true love doesn’t need reciprocation. Jesus came to His own and His own rejected Him. Knowing it would be so, He still came and did what He had to do - nothing less than lay down His life for those hating Him.

### **Particle - Disturbing Dream of Archie**

I had a very unpleasant dream of Archie, wherein he was troubled and antagonistic. I awoke and asked Marilyn if I had not offended a little one. Then suddenly I was reminded of the picture I bought at a garage sale 12 or 13 years ago. Do you recall the [picture](#) of the men on winged horses, one of those being doomed on forbidden territory? I realized that the picture was fulfilled in Archie and that I was not the one to blame for his situation. Still, how tragic it was!

### **Particle - Another Battle with Marilyn**

We had another battle, out of nowhere, for no good reason. Whereas I often found Marilyn to be utterly unreasonable during her time of the month, this was two days after she finished. The Bible designates 7 days of uncleanness after a woman’s time. Does this include the emotional/spiritual state as well as the physical?

She could be so interruptive, impudent, argumentative, defensive, and self-justifying. She made me so very angry.

It’s an awful shame for any couple to fight so, especially those who name the Lord, and even more so those who presume to lead and teach, supposing to understand and be a light. “Don’t do as we do. Just do as we say!” Why the furious war between us? There could be lulls between the battles, some short, some longer, but they were always sure to erupt, one way or another. Why?

She complained about all the time it took to home-school Jonathan and deal with the farm. I tried to reason with her, but she wouldn't listen. Why was there no time? Was God unjust? She said she couldn't take any more, squarely laying the blame on me. And I didn't know who was to blame. I was sure we were both guilty, but I was getting fed up with her.

I finished [The Lovely Essence of Satan](#).

### **Particle - Dealing Devils Death**

Surprisingly, [Les Mills](#) came by, and we talked for three hours. Les didn't believe a thing I said. He reminded me very much of [Art Beals](#), one professing faith, dogmatically so, yet believing nothing, a constant enemy of the faith.

Two things I said to him defeated Les on this day. One, he wondered why I wasn't getting in touch with him. I told him that while he was free to come and go, I wasn't. Two, he thought I wasn't in touch with him because I was hurt or offended. I told him that such wasn't at all the case, that I had hurt them and not they me. He didn't like that. Not that I had intentions of hurting anyone.

Les said they had wanted to come to the farm and get to know us all, but [my letter](#) nixed it. He walked away with defeat written all over him. I felt bad, but there was nothing I could do about it. He acknowledged that perhaps the words I had been speaking to him were true, but the timing was wrong. I told him that if God was giving me the words, He was also over the timing. I saw the words I was given to speak as good seed sown to come to fruition in due time.

### **Particle - A Curious Coincidence**

On the day that Les visited, [Bob Fife](#) called Sean and told him the very same thing I heard from Les. Bob said that he had been prepared to come to the farm, but my letter to him precluded a visit. This was a double witness in one day from two entirely independent sources that my letters discouraged people from us. Was God telling me I'm wrong, that I do great damage in my letter writing? I didn't know; I just didn't. What I did know was that my [vision](#) was fulfilled of landing on enemy territory and defeating the enemy coming to stop me, which included Les. Was stopping the enemy from wasting our time not a good thing?

As for Bob, he spewed out all sorts of absurdities to Sean and wasn't prepared to be corrected or to consider anything else. Would there, then, have been any point in his coming?

### **Particle - Be Christian Again or Perish**

Now for some apparent blasphemy. The Christian we have been must go. We must become Christians all over again; that is what is meant by the Lord's "second coming" or His return. Whereas we "followed" Christ and were therefore "Christians," now it must be that we *are* Christ. This is the manifestation of a son of God.

Were we not legitimate as we were? Surely, just as the Jews, the Tabernacle, and the Temple were legitimate. But there came a day when those were done away. So with us. And while we served in weakness, in uncertainty, knowing only in part, in due time the perfect must come, seeing face to face and knowing even as also we are known (1 Corinthians 13:12). This is the day for which we as creatures have been groaning (Romans 8:19-21), even as a caterpillar in a cocoon strives to take on its new nature.

This is that Day of the Lord. This is the day of the dethronement of the son of perdition, of his consummation, and the day for the Lord to take the reins and rule (2 Thessalonians 2:8).

The synagogue (church) of Satan came, thinking they were at the front lines to see the coming of the Lord, and not only to see, but also to reign with Him. But they came and went, missing the whole event. Now judgment alone awaited them, because the Day of the Lord is a day of judgment, great for the righteous but terrible for the wicked. It is the day of their rebuke.

Satan came to devour and he failed, as purposed; he found nothing in me. The man child has been “raptured,” caught up to where nothing can touch him anymore, and Satan’s power is broken.

We must be born again, again. This is that third and final Feast. The Lord was with, came to be in, and now comes to **BE**, that God may be all in all. The Feast of Tabernacles is the present reality, the finality of His work, ready to begin a new day.

## ***Page 2***

### **Particle - Mark Benson Arrives**

I picked Mark up at the bus depot; he arrived from Japan to be involved with the farm. Within two days, he fell ill, having eaten some cheese Marilyn had asked Lois to deal with two weeks earlier. Why would Lois not heed instruction? Time and time again, I found this neglect with her.

### **Particle - The Virtue of Amway**

If only Amway distributors got as excited about the Lord as they did about Rich De Vos, LOC, financial independence, vacations, time shares, fancy cars, and big houses!

If Amway was so interested in the environment and health, it would be teaching everyone to use baking soda, olive oil, rubbing alcohol, salt, vinegar, borax, lemon juice, and washing soda as cleaning and polishing agents, instead of “compassionately capitalizing” (referring to Rich De Vos’s book) on far more expensive and detrimental chemical cleaning agents.

According to Amway, Jesus should have come sponsoring people (perhaps particularly the poor) into a capitalistic organization full of compassion, teaching them all how to run an independent business out of their homes, reaching out to the whole world through a business vehicle. Instead, He called on them to lay down their lives, literally losing them in many cases, to be hated and persecuted by the world.

The believers’ first message was not, “Hey! We can get you financial independence and freedom, a wonderful home, car, vacations, and early retirement! We can get you family harmony!” But what was the message? “Repent! Deny yourself; take up the cross; forsake all - family, friends, possessions, and ambitions. Speak and preach the Truth; preach the Gospel.”

The rich young ruler could well have been an Amway Double Diamond or Crown Direct Distributor who was teaching many to have financial independence. He kept the Law from his youth, he said. That would have included loving both God and neighbor. Was he involved in “compassionate capitalism” or did he fall short of the glory of, and acceptance with, God because he didn’t have a networking business to share with others?

What emphasis Amway places on putting away a nest egg! Jesus spoke of just such a man whose granaries were full and who said, "I'll build more and greater granaries and be set for life." But what did God say to him? "You fool. This night will your soul be required. Then whose shall those goods be?"

Said Jesus, contrary to the business-, riches-, and security-minded:

"Therefore do not be anxious, saying, 'What shall we eat?' or, 'What shall we drink?' or, 'With what shall we be clothed?' For the nations seek after all these things. For your Heavenly Father knows that you have need of all these things. But seek first the Kingdom of God and His righteousness; and all these things shall be added to you. Therefore do not be anxious about tomorrow; for tomorrow shall be anxious for its own things. Sufficient to the day is the evil of it" (Matthew 6:31-34 MKJV).

Amway says, "Lay up treasures." Jesus says, "**Lay not up treasures.**" Amway says, "Family is important." Jesus says, "**Forsake family**" (Matthew 10:37-38). Amway says, "Enjoy life by gain." Jesus says, "**Lose your life for My sake and you'll find it**" (Matthew 10:39).

If Amway people were to admit they are Gentiles (unbelievers), fine, but they preach prosperity in the Name of God and Jesus Christ, so contrary to what He lived and taught. Not good, not good at all.

### Particle - Marilyn's Spiritual State

The first thing Mark had to say soon after arriving was about Marilyn. He saw her as defensive and clinging to life. He saw that it wasn't about Sean, but about what she was worshipping, which wasn't God; it was something she wanted. When he confronted her, she immediately pontificated about how we need to look to the Lord. She justified herself, insisting on having her cake and eating it, too - having the Lord and making a display of serving Him and seeking after His will, yet retaining her own agenda of fulfillment, happiness, and being loved.

Marilyn had said she wanted so much to be loved, accepted, parented, and comforted. She was so insecure, possibly the fruit of her mother, Laura, leaving home when Marilyn was twelve. She confessed she had been afraid I would one day abandon her, the tiniest thought of which has never entered my mind.

At that age of twelve, with a father who was incapable of order and discipline, she took over the household. Laura's departure traumatized Marilyn's father, John. Perhaps Marilyn had little respect for authority because of the failure of authority figures in her life. Laura accused John of sexual perversion, bestiality no less. He also had a terrible temper. With her mother abandoning her responsibility of nurturing her children, how could Marilyn have confidence in authority, even parents?

With constant tears, Marilyn prayed to the Final Authority to bring her mother back to them, and when it didn't happen, she renounced Him. "There's no God," Marilyn bitterly declared. She decided she needed to take control and be the final authority in their home and in her life in general. This could explain how things had to be her way or nothing with us.

But that's all psychoanalysis, which, by experience, I've found serves little, if anything, to address and solve spiritual problems.

I must acknowledge that Marilyn was intelligent and had perception and understanding in many and diverse matters. So often, though not always, she was right and I was wrong in judgment. This compelled me to heed her advice, sometimes unwisely. However, Marilyn's mistake was that she usurped the authority because of her abilities.

The Lord once revealed to me concerning Kerri that it isn't the knowledge and ability a person has, but what one does with it that counts. Should Paul McCartney be King of England because of his musical abilities? The Scripture says that gifts bring men before kings. It doesn't say that gifts qualify one to be king.

Marilyn made herself king/lord/husband/head with her gifts of intelligence, organizational and manipulative skills, tenacity, and strong will. She defiled herself, her marriage, and all those with whom she had to do. And Sean [ate her dung](#) with her.

I saw visions and prophecies of her being right on. While she agreed with positive points of those spiritual manifestations or revelations concerning her, she rejected the negative. One can't pick and choose; either the prophecy is of God or it isn't, whether positive or negative.

### **Particle - Hopes Deferred on Agreeable Neighbors**

When our Calvinist, Dutch Reform neighbors, the Den Hertogs, found out we didn't attend formal church, Chris denounced us, walking out in a huff, sarcastically wishing us a "good evening." I wrote him a note but decided not to give it to him, considering him too brutish to understand:

We were accused, tried, convicted, and condemned by a churchman for not going to church. Is it any wonder we don't go to church? If you are the better part of churchgoers, or even the average, is there not very good reason for us not to go?

You say you don't judge? You don't even know why we don't go. If we quote Scripture, you say we can make the Bible say anything. What do *you* make it say? Or do you claim to interpret it properly while we interpret it erroneously? Who are you to judge? You don't even *know* the Scriptures.

You say there are all-weather friends and fair-weather friends [he was fond of trite expressions]. Into which category should we place you?

Meeting him later, I asked him if he could accuse me of any sin (the Bible says nothing about going to church services). He admitted he couldn't. I asked him how it was we offended him. He replied, "You were too religious." I recalled mentioning God.

The Den Hertogs were faithful in dressing formally and attending Sunday services regularly. Here was a fellow who scorned me for not going to church and scorned me for mentioning God. Go figure. I learned that there are those who think one ought not to talk about God unless he is a "minister" or goes to church. So much for Dutch and Christian Reform faith that would allow such attitudes to prevail in their midst.

### **Particle - God's Law in the Legal Profession**

In April 1999, Stockwell Day had a far greater conflict with [Lorne Goddard](#) than we had only months before when Mr. Goddard sought to legally persuade Lois' son Jason against our counsel. As a minister of the Alberta government under Premier Ralph Klein, Mr. Day publicly criticized Lorne

Goddard for defending convicted pedophile Kevin Valley's right to possess child pornography. Goddard tried but failed to apply the British Columbia ruling that struck down child porn possession laws as unconstitutional. Day wrote Red Deer's, *The Advocate*, saying Goddard went well beyond his rightful duties as a lawyer representing his client when he reportedly said he actually believed the pedophile had the right to possess child porn.

Because this issue was before the courts, Premier Klein criticized Mr. Day for making these statements; however, the Premier quoted Mr. Day as saying Mr. Goddard's views went beyond his duties as a lawyer. Mr. Day also took issue with the fact that Goddard made his comments while serving as a trustee of the Red Deer school board, something Mr. Day found unacceptable and immorally influential towards young people. I agreed.

Consequently, Mr. Goddard, true to our experience of him, sued Mr. Day for \$300,000 in general damages and \$300,000 in punitive damages for defamation. So which is more important - how one looks in the eyes of others and how he prospers financially, or how one influences the society he presumes to serve? Which is more important - a good name at a fair cost, or a big name at any cost? Which is more important - upholding rights to be free to do evil in the name of freedoms and rights, or promoting and upholding valuable social responsibilities?

I didn't care if the letter of the law did find for Mr. Goddard. I saw Mr. Day as genuinely interested in defending morals for society's good, while Mr. Goddard was out for a name and a buck for himself, no matter the moral implications. God bless Mr. Day and give Goddard what is coming to him.

On December 22, 2000, there was a settlement out of court in Goddard's favor for nearly \$800,000. It cost Day \$60,000 and the Alberta Government, we the taxpayer, paid the rest.

### **Particle - Mariko Follows Mark**

On May 14, 1999, Mariko Shinji arrived from Japan and asked to stay, saying there was peace at the farm. Peace? Wow! If what we had was peace, I wouldn't want to see turmoil. She was after Mark, was she not? Were they meant to marry? I didn't know.

### **Particle - Pat Holt**

I chanced on a garage sale where an elderly lady was selling her household goods. We got talking. She had been married to a doctor who suddenly left her, and she was apparently overwhelmed at her husband's sudden action. She professed faith and attended Victory Christian Church.

She readily confessed she was financially in distress and needed whatever help she could get, that being a primary reason she was selling. She also began to speak of her faith. While she seemed to have a genuine conviction of Christ, I questioned her allegiance to a church I knew had nothing to do with Him and wondered why she was in her circumstances.

As I perused her sale goods, I found a used, lower quality 20-foot extension ladder. She was asking \$70 for it, which I thought was high. She didn't know the value of such things, except that she saw one somewhere for a higher price. I offered her \$40, feeling a bit chintzy given her situation (I could have given her \$100), but couldn't bring myself to give her more.

I discovered later that a new ladder of similar quality, with rope and working pulleys, was selling for what she was asking for hers; however, I didn't see the value of the ladder being the issue.



I was perplexed and concluded that Pat was in her circumstances for certain needful reasons and that I really shouldn't attempt to alleviate them by charitable donation or generosity. Was I right or wrong? I struggled with the matter and even called to talk to her, but nothing came of our talk in terms of being any wiser as to what God was doing with her.

### Particle - A False Prophecy?

One morning, it hit me square between the eyes that Marilyn's [prophecy](#) was false. It would have to be if my [written prophecy](#) to her was true. When I considered the prophecy again at this point, I saw anomaly. The Lord doesn't reveal a second husband while the first lives.

Why wouldn't the Lord tell me directly He was taking me? He didn't; in fact, He told me I would *not* be dying. Perhaps if I was a wicked man, He wouldn't speak to me, but was I wicked before Him? Even Marilyn told me the Lord was taking me to a glorious calling, akin to that of Moses, no less. Was that what He does with wicked men? If not wicked, why would God not speak to me directly? And why would He tell me His plan in the next world? If my calling was to be likened to that of Moses' calling in the afterlife, did He tell Moses what his would be? It is not heard that God does things that way.

But how does one explain the [undeniable dates](#) surrounding Marilyn's prophecy? Were these the power, signs, and lying wonders of the man of sin, of Satan, with all deceivableness of unrighteousness to deceive, if possible the elect?

Besides, Paul, Mark, and I heard that Marilyn's prophecy had already come to pass. Had I not died? Did not Marilyn "marry" Sean? I was taken and Marilyn set her affections on another man. Was this a self-fulfilling prophecy? Trevor also spoke saying to Marilyn and to me, "You are both right," when she was saying I would die and I was saying I wouldn't be dying. However, none of us saw a ministry in my life like that of Moses at the mount of transfiguration. And this much I knew: I still had to let this circumstance all happen.

### Particle - Marilyn's Contradiction

Marilyn declared I was a prophet and that my prophecies to others and of various matters were true, but when it came to those prophecies of her that she didn't like, she said they weren't of God.

She declared that I was a man of God, righteous in Him, and that He hadn't cast me aside, yet she rejected me for a man young enough to be her son, and that in the presence of all, despite my protests.

She declared I was still her husband, yet she wouldn't obey or submit to me as her head, according to Scripture, and declared she chose Sean over me as her husband, not that she submitted to him, either, from the reports I got.

When we discussed things at the farm, she immediately contradicted me before all and, not only so, but became angry and argumentative with me. I could do nothing right in her sight, and Sean could say, think, and do no wrong.

She complained that we had no intimacy, yet sang Sean's praises and how they had a love she and I had never known. How was I supposed to be intimate with her?

Why would the Lord say He had been waiting to hear me say I would [serve Him](#) with my infirmities, if there was no call or need for service with infirmity? And why was I still here nearly 15 months after accepting my infirmities and serving Him?

If, as Marilyn said, she and Sean were supposed to be the model display to the world of a marriage, how was it she said to him, “Your life is in my hands; you have no choice but to do as you’re told”? Was this the foundation of a marriage of love, wherein the husband is to do as the wife commands? What was this - the Romance of the Preying Mantis?

It was just revealed to me that the dung Marilyn and Sean were eating in the [vision](#) represented her bitter past. Dung is that which was passed. Bitterness is that of one eating their own dung; Marilyn hadn’t overcome her past.

Marilyn laid the onus on me for our conflict, saying, “You’re hurting and speaking out of your pain.” Yes, partially true, yet she justified herself as though not responsible for my pain. She carried her bitterness, hurt me, and then blamed me for our troubled relationship because I was hurt! She and Sean were in great wickedness, and all I could do was obey the Lord and let it all happen.

### **Particle - Flowers and Weeds**

“You’re critical,” they say to me. Just as one can be wrongfully positive, so one can be rightfully negative or critical. If I go into a garden in need of dressing and keeping, what do I do if I want it to be a pleasant and productive one? I focus on the weeds to remove them. So I’m negative because I address the weeds? I should think that if one is essentially negative, he would leave the weeds and permit the garden to be overgrown with them. Negativity’s fruit would be the proof.

“But we are flowers, not weeds!” the weeds protest. Surely, thistles bloom, but it doesn’t make them desirable flowers.

“But one man’s weed is another man’s flower!” they cry. True, and when I work in God’s garden, He is the One Who decides what He wishes to keep and what to be taken away.

“Well,” they reply, “who are you to judge? Only God is judge!” God gives to His servants the prophets to judge between good and evil. And it’s the tares that protest my coming and my work because they’re the seed of the enemy trying to preserve themselves.

### **Particle - Tension Increases at Harvest Haven**

On May 29<sup>th</sup>, I came to the farm and found it to be so heavy and oppressive I wanted to leave. Lois was in a stew, Trevor was in his usual sulking mood, and Mariko was struggling with Mark. Marilyn said she received it was Lois’ turn for judgment and had a vision of Lois angry, fighting, and thrashing about.

**Author’s Note:** In April 2015, I note that this oppression became manifest two weeks after Mariko’s arrival on May 14, 1999. I hadn’t made the connection, partly because of everything else going on. More importantly, the Lord didn’t quicken this connection to me.

### **Particle - Talk with Mariko**

On June 9<sup>th</sup>, Mariko came and spent some time at Moon River, staying the night. She and I had a talk. Without premeditation, I spoke to her of how lower life forms, against their wills, are consumed by the higher, thus becoming the form by which they are consumed, the forms being mineral, plant, animal, human, and Divine. As cows eat the grass that thus becomes the cow, so God reaches down to man, consumes him, and he becomes one with God.

I shared with her that life forms cannot will or accomplish being a higher life form and that if a form is not consumed from above, it reverts to those below. She was apparently moved by these things.

Marilyn received a prophecy for Mariko, saying, *"I love you and I am with you."*

Mariko left for Japan on June 19<sup>th</sup>; Mark was very emotional about it, though she seemed to take it without difficulty. I saw no faith in Mariko and didn't feel it was God's will at this time for them to marry. However, I felt the door must be left open and contact maintained, at least for the time.

Mariko's father called on June 29<sup>th</sup>, perplexed about the situation between Mark and Mariko. He had hoped and expected they would marry.

### **Particle - Jonathan's Vision: Lightning Bolts Headed Upward**

On June 11, 1999, Jonathan had a vision of lightning bolts heading upward in darkness. He received a prophecy that *everything was going back to the Lord*. This day was Day 990, **490 days** (7 X 70) after [February 6, 1998](#), the day my 10-day fast ended, which was 11 years from the day when I had the [vision](#) at Paul's of the star hitting the earth.

By the way, my fast ended **153 days** before **July 10<sup>th</sup>**. Remember the number of fish in the net when the Lord told the disciples to cast the net on the other side of the boat? Why were the fish even counted? And why did they add up to 153? I don't know.

### **Particle - Vision: Great Man Struck Down, Tiny Body Raised Up**

Early in the morning of June 12, 1999, I had a vision wherein I saw a tall, basically naked man, about 30-ish, fairly long hair (somewhat like da Vinci's "Vitruvian Man"). He was hit on the forehead by an object and slain. He fell backwards in a stiff, straight form, hard and final. I then saw him lowered into the deepest of graves by two straps, as they use for coffins. He was buried as he was when alive - nearly naked. The grave seemed to have no bottom, but I'm not sure.

I then saw a small bundled body (as they bury paupers in backward countries) about a foot long, going up to the highest height possible in Heaven, yet in bundled state.

I believe this vision spoke of me, my death, and the humble beginning of a new life. This day (June 12, 1999 - Day 991) is the first day after **490 days** (70 X 7) following [February 6, 1998](#) when my 10-day fast ended, 11 years and a day after I had the [vision](#) at Paul's of the star hitting the earth.

**Reminder:** All these days are [coordinated](#) with Marilyn's prophecy of September 24, 1996 wherein I was told I would be taken and would have a ministry like that of Moses. The Day of Atonement (Yom Kippur) that year was September 23<sup>rd</sup>, beginning in the evening and progressing to the evening of the 24<sup>th</sup>.

Therefore, the prophecy was on the Day of Atonement, or the tenth day of the 7<sup>th</sup> month of the sacred Hebrew calendar, according to the Scriptures.

### **Particle - A Renewed Resignation**

I saw now that Marilyn and Sean had firmly chosen to be with each other. As I visited the farm I saw them trying to conceal their feelings and their conduct with each other from me but it was obvious, even as Les saw it. All the others had constantly seen it. I had been publicly stripped of all things.

I lost the will to love her. She had asked, “What do you want from me?” Indeed, what did I want? Did I want her to say, “I no longer love Sean. I love you”? But my mind and heart seemed to be telling me I no longer wanted her. Two years before, I would have wanted her to return, but not now. I lost the will to give in order to get.

I wanted to say, “Sean, you want her? Have her. She’s yours.” Surely, if not for Jonathan, I would have left long ago. Idolatry of Jonathan? Why did I not leave her for the Lord? Yet I suspected the Lord wanted me to hang in there for her, though I lost any will or desire to do so. It was scary.

### **Particle - Inguinal Take Two**

On June 17<sup>th</sup>, Jonathan was again taken to hospital for a hernia operation, this time on the other side. The surgeon, Dr. Gome, said it was a rare thing to have an inguinal hernia on both sides. Both operations were performed and concluded satisfactorily. Where was the Lord’s healing, for which we had asked? No miracles here, but there was the provision, as it was.

### **Particle - Don’t Try to Understand**

I must now mention something we were told within months, if not weeks, of the time Marilyn received the prophecy in September 1996. We were constantly debating whether or not I would die, whether literally or otherwise, when, how, and why. We debated details and apparent contradictions. We spent hours and hours, often getting into arguments and quagmires of thought and getting nowhere.

Several times we were told by the Spirit of God to go on with the duties at hand and to not try to figure these things out. We were told to not try to understand. Everything was hidden from us with purpose. We needed to believe that, and often we did, but often we forgot to do so. Forgetting, inevitably there was trouble.

For some time, I believed the Lord was taking me, even as Marilyn heard, but not literally, not by physical death. Marilyn was ever adamant it was to be a physical death.

### **Particle - Marilyn’s Machinations**

Marilyn received that all those at the farm were in rebellion and sedition toward Sean. Yet she indulged in utter witchcraft (rebellion) and usurpation of authority, with brashness and without apology. She courted Sean before all. She was thus as Jezebel, teaching the Lord’s servants to commit fornication and to sacrifice unto idols (Revelation 2:20).

I had been intimidated by her violent reactions and shamed by her tears. No more. Her reactions were not justified and her tears were not the tears of Hannah or Leah, but of Delilah. She was full

of contradiction and power, able to move and deceive anyone with her charms. I had been deceived for a quarter century.

Perhaps I bore guilt for waiting so long and allowing all this, but I was persuaded of two things: One, that these things had to have their time; and, two, that we would make it through. I believed it is God's will and doing.

I was now resolved to risk losing all with Marilyn, even to the point of her leaving, if I needed to speak. I would no longer be intimidated by her or fear to lose anything or incur her horrible wrath. But I couldn't speak without good and just cause.

### **Particle - Saints Slain by Sinners, for Sinners**

An astonishing, yet profoundly simple truth hit me. God poured out His wrath upon His Son through those for whom it was meant. If the Son had reacted and rejected the wrath, those for whom it was intended would have had no hope of salvation. Because He suffered it by them, their salvation was sure. God, by children of wrath, is pouring out upon His own children the wrath meant for the children of wrath. His sons and daughters serve as substitutes, as vicarious, sacrificial lambs at the hands of their persecutors for their persecutors' sakes.

Warning: This doesn't mean saints should surrender to death or abuse anytime or indiscriminately. There is a time appointed, even as Jesus didn't allow His enemies to take Him until His time.

### **Particle - Letter to My Mother**

On May 7, 1998, I wrote a letter to my mother but didn't send it until June 30, 1999. It was a letter attempting a reconciliation of sorts, not to cross or abolish spiritual barriers, which would be impossible, but to try and clear up misunderstandings and make any possible amends. My opening paragraph:

"I come in peace, hoping that one day there will be peace and reconciliation between us. I wonder if I can finally express my heart to you after 50 years."

I went on to review my childhood, particularly as specifically involving her. I bared my heart. I closed with:

"Perhaps one day, whether in this life or in the next, the Lord will see fit to reconcile us to Himself and to each other so that we may truly know a meaning as never before to that expression, which I have found to be true on other occasions, 'All is well that ends well.' The Lord is the resurrection and the life. He makes out of nothing and brings back from the dead, performing the impossible. That is a wonderful truth offering sure hope for those who believe."

### **Particle - Lois' Vision: I Speaking to Many People**

The thought came to me to begin holding informal meetings locally with Bible study and open discussion on matters of life. In expressing my thoughts to Lois, she said she saw me speaking to a large group of people, without number. She saw me elevated, with my right hand stretched forth, and leaning towards them. She had the vision a couple of days before I talked to her, which would be approximately June 29, 1999.

### **Particle - Removing the Tares?**

When Les and Penny had [confronted Marilyn](#) on what Les saw as an ungodly relationship between her and Sean, Marilyn denied there was anything. So Penny asked, “Just what *is* your relationship with Sean?”

“We are friends,” Marilyn replied. She couldn’t bring herself to tell the truth. She couldn’t bring the Lord into it, saying, “We are brother and sister in the Lord Jesus Christ,” for example. She couldn’t even say, “As owner of the farm, I’m teaching Sean to manage it.” She denied and lied. If the Lord was doing what she said He was doing, why the shame and the lies? I very much appreciated Penny’s question.

I wondered if my [prophecy](#) of the Lord sending His servants to remove the tares sown in Marilyn’s mind pertained to Les and Penny and company.

### Particle - I Am Leaving

On July 5<sup>th</sup>, I told Jonathan I was leaving, that I couldn’t hold out for him any longer. He pleaded and cried. It was so hard. He seemed to be resigning himself to the possibility.

Marilyn was angry with me for it, saying my “yea should be yea and my nay, nay.” I think she was telling me that I should only tell him I was leaving if I meant it.

This I knew - if I perceived any determined unrepentance in her or a refusal to change, I would consider myself free of her and I would leave. The marriage vow was “for better or for worse,” but not “for good or for evil.”

(As I write this from my journal record, I don’t remember the occasion and feel quite bad that I did such a thing to Jonathan. Was I feeling sorry for myself? Was I looking for sympathy from him? I don’t remember. I didn’t follow through. If I meant it, what changed my mind? I don’t recall.)

### Particle - Talking Behind Marilyn’s Back

I had many discussions about the trouble with Marilyn - with Paul, Kerri, Mark, and Lois. Marilyn told me she never talked behind my back as I did behind hers. Yet she talked love and marriage with another man and publicly declared her allegiance to him instead of me in front of my only acquaintances without telling me. My, how innocent and righteous! I didn’t deserve her!

### Particle - The Two Men of Bob Gregson’s Dream

I took a nap and awoke with a quickening that the two persons with the red and black roses in [Bob Gregson’s dream](#) were the *two witnesses*. I know I’d talked about that before and yet had to say, “Of course! Where have I been?” All this came on the heels of asking Marilyn to pray with me while I asked the Lord what was happening and what He was doing with me. Marilyn gave me a hug, saying she received that she was to comfort me until He came for me.

I recall [hearing](#) the words, “*Two entities vying for power,*” when asking the Lord what was going on during trying times with Marilyn. I initially assumed the words spoke of Marilyn and me. Then, I’d wondered if the two entities of Bob’s dream were not within me, the old and the new, one with the black rose and one with the red, both waiting for the Lord’s coming down the river.

### Particle - Birds Have Brains



I watched an American goldfinch up close in the basement laundry window. It seemed to have a personality, an intelligence quite beyond what one expects. I've also watched fledgling waxwings making themselves familiar and comfortable with me. They were explorative, innocent, and naïve.

Young robins sure squawk for their food, demanding it of their parents who devote their lives to raising their young. What is sex, marriage, house-building, producing food or income for living, but one great scenario of propagation? We reproduce ourselves. Our existence seems mainly devoted to bringing others into existence after ourselves, in our image. A primary instruction God gave man in the beginning was to replenish the earth.

### Particle - Angry Adversaries

[Nathan and Chris](#) drove into the farmyard. I wasn't there at the time. Nathan came for his .22 rifle, which was registered in his name. He suddenly became very angry and nasty with Sean. Indeed, some were wondering if he might not use the gun. I notified Firearms about his short temper; they said they would put it on record.

Speaking to Chris later, he told me he had friends to financially assist him in suing us for work compensation and abuse. Chris settled down when I began to ask him a few questions for which he had no answers. I told him he had hurt me by taking off without warning, but that I was open to future talks and reconciliation.

He was hurting. His prime observation was that there was a great lack of love on the farm. He commended Marilyn, saying she cared and tried to help. Of Sean, Chris said he was arrogant, power hungry, knowing nothing.

There seemed to be nasty notions floating about in the boys' heads, and I saw Archie as the instigator, not that Lois and Sean were by any means innocent.

## ***Page 3***

### Particle - July 10, 1999

I found nothing in particular happening on this July 10<sup>th</sup>, but I was reminded of four things the Lord said to me in this ordeal:

One, *"Lay down your life for all."*

Two, *"Let it happen"* (between Marilyn and Sean).

Three, *"You'll not be dying. Will you believe Me?"*

Four, *"I want you to serve Me with your infirmities."*

Besides these, I had the [vision](#) of Marilyn and Sean and the [prophecies](#). The Lord sent strong delusion to us that we should believe a lie (2 Thessalonians 2) because we didn't have a love of the truth. It is part of the process of our salvation; He will deliver and cleanse us of it all.

### Particle - Evan Yurkoski

On July 24<sup>th</sup>, I met Evan Yurkoski of Cranbrook, British Columbia, a man about my age, who was holding a garage sale, selling furniture out of a house he had rented on Scenic Heights in

Lethbridge. He believed God was leading him to live in Lethbridge, but his wife wouldn't come with him so he was moving out. He gave me several videotapes from Stan Johnson's *The Prophecy Club*, which he was duplicating and distributing to all interested parties. He also sold me a VCR player.

Later reflecting on Evan, I concluded he was hurting (there are hurting people everywhere). He talked of many things and seemed to want to be a minister of God with revelations and explanations, yet at times, I almost expected him to blurt out, "I need answers and help." Just when it seemed he was about to do so, he would draw back to taking the role of one who meets, not has, needs. We would see and learn more of Evan.

### Particle - The Sign of the Son of Man

**"And then the sign of the Son of Man shall appear in the heavens. And then all the tribes of the earth shall mourn, and they shall see the Son of Man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory" (Matthew 24:30 MKJV).**

I received a revelation of the nature of **the sign of the Son of man**. The sign is the laying down of the life. It is manifest through those who have taken up the cross to follow the Lord, loving and obeying Him, and coming to that place of maturity in Him, whereby they minister His life, bearing witness to the world. There would be those who see these things and repent:

**"Behold, He comes with the clouds, and every eye will see Him, and those who pierced Him will see Him, and all the kindreds of the earth will wail because of Him. Even so, Amen" (Revelation 1:7 MKJV).**

### Particle - Giving Marilyn to Sean

Some weeks before, when Sean called in the middle of the night to talk, I "gave" Marilyn to him, "putting her hand into his." What happened then? Why did I do it? I don't know, except that I felt or thought I was supposed to. But what now? And if I was to be taken at my word, why should I have complained about their relationship (about which she was complaining recently)? Then again, if my word takes precedence, what about "till death do us part" in 1974?

### Particle - Defying Dumbfounding Duties

Many of us hesitate to do what we're unfamiliar with. The whole picture or destination seems daunting or even impossible. The solution? Begin to tackle it by seeking even tiny bits of information and advice from any and all directions. Be patient and don't lose hope, even in darkness. Soon things begin to crystallize. A step at a time with perseverance will possibly bring one to understanding and the desired result.

If we fail, little or nothing may be lost, but if we succeed, the reward is a sense of accomplishment, well-being, satisfaction, and growing confidence. Peace of mind and rest are a bonus to a problem solved.

**Caution:** There is a ripening, a timing for things, so patience is necessary, and waiting for such a timing should not be necessarily judged as fear or laziness. It's never good to be hasty.

### Particle - George Warnock

On August 10<sup>th</sup>, after some days of coaxing, Jonathan persuaded me to take him up to Crowsnest Pass towards the Rocky Mountains. We decided to visit [George Warnock](#) in Cranbrook. George was known in Christian circles as an author, particularly of his booklet, "The Feast of Tabernacles."

He and his wife, Ruth, received us as believers, fed us, and kindly gave us a room for the night. During our stay, we met their daughter and son-in-law, Sharon and Warren, who had a nine-year-old seriously autistic daughter, Rebecca. George and Ruth said she became autistic shortly, if not immediately, after a vaccination. They wanted me to pray for her, but I couldn't do it. I knew, or at least believed, my prayer wouldn't be heard. Why?

As we visited, we found much compromise in their lives with the world. I asked George what he thought of the baptism in the Holy Spirit. George told me he couldn't claim he had been baptized with the Holy Spirit and with fire. Here was a man who was now into his eighties, had been famous among many evangelicals and Charismatics, writing books which were rather widely distributed, yet hadn't received the Spirit. He wasn't saved. I wondered.

"Why did you permit Rebecca to be vaccinated?" I asked them.

"We didn't know it would do any harm," George replied.

I wondered why they hadn't known vaccinations were toxic and dangerous. Would God not have protected them if they had been walking in faith and obedience to Him? I asked them if they asked the Lord about the cause of their granddaughter's condition. They said they had not.

I informed them that they could ask and that He always answered because He would want them to know. I told them about my [brother David](#), who died of cancer because of sin, and of [Ahenakew's son](#) who was struck with the flesh-eating disease because of sin, and that in both cases, the Lord revealed to me the cause of their illness. The point was that these tragedies didn't come for nothing:

***"As the bird by wandering, as the swallow by flying, so the curse without cause shall not come" (Proverbs 26:2 MKJV).***

We left it at that. I had nothing to say for the time. After leaving there, Jonathan and I went for a walk. During that walk, the Lord revealed to me that George was "Mr. Middleman," a compromiser, playing it safe in the name of non-judgmentalism. This is a hateful thing to the Lord.

I prayed, "Lord, let me not compromise, but speak truthfully, boldly, and unapologetically." Would I be saying anything to the Warnocks?

I realized days after that the Warnocks are ashamed of the Lord, loving the world and all its ways. They had a grave with a cross for a dog, celebrated Mother's Day, Christmas, promoted ungodly "Christian" books, and so forth. I finally decided to speak to them so I wrote them a letter, telling them what I saw. I also sent them four papers: [Commitment](#), [Law and Grace](#), [Obedience](#), and [The Wrath of God](#).

### **Particle - What I Want**

I want to be one in and with the Lord here and now. I want to be His Presence, His Will, His Person on earth before all, to be in His stead, crucified unto the world, all His, always, in all things, everywhere, for His sake, not mine. Lord, You know.

That fiery desire has never left me or abated all these decades.

### **Particle - A Strange Illness from Warnocks**

While we were at Warnock's, their grandson Jubal (who was adopted, if I recall correctly - could be wrong) was ill with some kind of flu, but still played with Jonathan. As a result, when we returned home, Jonathan was contaminated and fell ill. As a result, I caught it from Jonathan, and was I sick! I wanted to die and stayed in bed.

I realized I was sick because, one, I didn't guide Jonathan to steer clear of Jubal, from whom he caught this virus. I thought: I won't catch it, being immune to some colds going around. Speak of selfishness! What about Jonathan? What about everyone else?!

Two, I saw how Warnock's compromising life brings sickness and death to all those who come in touch with him. He didn't practise hygiene/quarantine with Jubal and didn't warn us (except to say Jubal had a cold - saying it matter-of-factly). This sickness was a figure of what George is doing spiritually to all those who look to, and associate with, him.

The Lord showed me that I was very nice in my letter to him - too nice. He is wicked - as Eli. Also, the Lord was teaching me not to compromise. He hates compromise. I must be what I am, be direct, forthright, an Israelite indeed in whom there is no guile, up front - now, from the beginning of any encounter, as I am given to see and know what is the issue.

### **Particle - Make Your Enemies Now**

The Lord once said to me, "*Make your enemies now.*" I understood that to mean that I needed to speak up. I felt like I hadn't been direct enough, soon enough. I felt I'd wasted time, energy, resources, and suffered complications and indignities of all sorts for the wrong reasons. Many were allowed to play games with us. Allowed by whom? By us! Why? Because we were trying to hang on to business, relationships, and favorable public image. If this was true, we would be paying dearly in time to come.

Though there is a time and place for everything, we better make sure we speak what, when, how, and where we ought and, perhaps more importantly, why - for the right reasons. We ought to speak not because of a legalistic duty to witness or because religious men coax us to do so or because hell and death are about to break out and we want to save ourselves, but because we love the Lord and it burns in us to identify with Him.

"Father, Lord Jesus, let us not deny You; let us not be ashamed, and let us not testify unto You to glorify ourselves."

### **Particle - Supporting My Son**

Jonathan invited Thomas Harris and Jeff Webber, neighbors his age, over to play. They proceeded to do so, leaving Jonathan out. With a plaintive countenance, Jonathan complained to me before them, and I said, "All right, one goes. Who will it be?"

I then lectured Thomas and Jeff, who have both on occasion betrayed or turned on Jonathan. I told them they would either be friends, not just for now but consistently, or nothing. They had a choice and it was to be made now. I related my childhood experiences with my cousin and pointed out

that Jonathan had never done to them as they were doing to him. They agreed. I said that if he **were** guilty of such, he would be in trouble with me.

It has been taught by some that children should be allowed to work things out on their own. In other words, let evil be done and eventually it'll work out. I don't agree. Children need instruction and discipline. When I was eight, Jonathan's age, nobody stood with me, not my parents, not anyone. I don't see that it was ever good. God do so and more to me if I don't stand with my son when such situations arise.

### Particle - Sage Solomon's Shortfall

It occurred to me that Solomon's wisdom was the best there was, had been, or would be of **this world**, though not of the one above. That is why he fell - the wisdom of this world wouldn't prevail and wasn't to be glorified. That is why Jesus said, **"Behold, a greater than Solomon is here."** The saints have the heavenly wisdom because they have the Mind of Christ.

Furthermore, Solomon's wisdom was attractive and honored by the world, while the Lord's wisdom was not always, if ever, so. Solomon's wisdom was used only for himself and his people. For examples, Hiram, who built the Temple, wasn't pleased with the cities Solomon gave him; Solomon took eleven years building his own house when the Temple took only seven; Solomon taxed the people heavily and gathered riches, was arrayed in splendor, gathered many horses and chariots, against God's admonition, and married many wives, which he was commanded not to do. No, Solomon's wisdom was very great, but it wasn't the wisdom ultimately intended for all those who are destined to rule with Christ.

### Particle - Losses Common to the Greatest

I think of having lost up to three years or more of Jonathan's life because of my whoring after riches in the stock market. Yet losses of every sort are common to all. King David lost his sons, Amnon, Absalom, Adonijah, Bathsheba's first child, and possibly another. He lost years with his family while serving in Saul's court and later when fleeing to the wilderness for his life. In his military campaigns, he was often away from home and family.

As a teenager, Joseph suddenly lost his entire family and wouldn't see them again for over two decades. His own brothers wanted to kill him and sold him into slavery.

Solomon, in all his glory, didn't have even one son in whom he could take pleasure. The one succeeding him (Rehoboam) was a wicked fool by whom Israel and Judah were divided. Yet all this was God's design. No, there's nothing sure or of great value to cling to in this life. It is all vanity, as Solomon said, but we will see the value of God's works in the hereafter.

### Particle - The Purpose of Vanity

I wrote in my journal:

Lord, how would I really know the folly of heaping riches, the plight of the rich man, and the truth of Your counsel, had I not experienced it all for myself? How would I know the betrayal of a spouse, the heartache of a lover's betrayal, extolling, yea, worshipping another, had it not been that I was subjected to it?

How is it, Lord, that we can be so naïve as to expect You to know, experience, and suffer all things, while we simply hear what You say, believe it, and never experience it? And so we have been made subject to vanity, to folly, to darkness and consequences so that we may no longer be innocent. But in and through these things, we get to know the sweet taste of victory, the freedom that comes from nothing left to lose, knowing God is all that counts, that He is ever present and in full control for our benefit.

Adam and Eve had to sin; the Fall had to be.

### Particle - Warnock Replies

On August 26<sup>th</sup>, I received a reply from George Warnock. He exemplified the very things I said of him. He is a religious, self-righteous, self-important, wicked fool, a false teacher leading many down a rosy path, which they are glad to take, not knowing it leads to Apollyon's lair.

"How do they crave destruction." Warnock's constant theme was non-judgmentalism. Why? Isn't it because he didn't wish to be judged because he knew he was guilty? That's why people cry, "You're judging!" They live in sin and wish to remain there. So it is with George and Ruth Warnock.

### Particle - My Deepest Desire

As much as my flesh wished earnestly to do its own thing, I deeply desired to do the will of the Lord. I was thrilled at the thought of it. I wanted to be utterly identified with Him before all the earth, come what may.

Many great things can happen to a man on this earth, but what greater, more rewarding thing can possibly be than to walk with the Lord Jesus on earth and in Heaven, right here and now? There's nothing that compares or comes close. Indeed, it goes without saying.

"Lord, lead and do. Let me not preserve my life. Let me not even calculate, but let me be utterly abandoned to You, one with You."

### Particle - Will the Real Husband Please Stand Up?

On August 31, 1999, I had another battle with Marilyn. Lois made a remark on August 27<sup>th</sup> that angered me. She said that Marilyn was submitted to Sean as her head and that it was a good thing. I needed to ask:

**One** - Was it good that she was submissive to Sean, but not to me? Was it that he was her husband and not I? If I was her husband (not in name only, but in the Lord), how was it good for her to be submissive to another man and not to me?

**Two** - If he was now her husband, in which case it would be good that she be submissive, then what were she and I doing living in adultery?

**Three** - If Sean was in charge over the farm and over my wife, then to whom did he answer? There was no talk of his submitting to her, yet she was over, and responsible for, the farm. There was no talk of her or our being owners, while Sean, as manager, submits to us. There was only talk now, from both my wife and Lois the whore, of Marilyn being submissive to him. Again, was he now over the farm, over my wife, and over me, as well?



**Four** - If he was over all, then why was my name on the farm, and how did Marilyn continue with my name? And how long would that go on? The answer, of course, in the mouths of those three was, "Until you die shortly; we believe the prophecy." The whore and the ex would also soon say, "Sean is answerable to nobody but God," if they weren't already saying it. Marilyn had already said that the farm wasn't mine but God's, and so it is, yet He had thus far put my name on it. "Not for long," I heard them saying, "not for long."

Many dates had been heard and set for my demise by all of us. They now expected the possibility of my demise on the third anniversary of her prophecy, 24 days hence.

### **Particle - A Poem I Must Present**

James Russell Lowell wrote the following poem, "This Present Crisis," in the 1840's or 50's, a rare sample of wisdom from above.

Once to every man and nation comes the moment to decide

In the strife of Truth with falsehood

For the good or evil side....

Then it is the brave man chooses

While the coward stands aside,

Till the multitude make virtue

Of the truth they had denied....

By the light of burning heretics

Christ's bleeding feet on track

Toiling up new Calvarys ever

With the cross that turns not back....

Though the cause of evil prosper,

Yet 'tis Truth alone is strong;

Though her portion be the scaffold

And upon the throne be wrong

Yet that scaffold sways the future,

And, behind the dim unknown,

Standeth God within the shadow

Keeping watch above His own.

- James Russell Lowell

### Particle - Necessary Fires Come

Something repeatedly came to me in the past week or more. Great trials and sufferings are coming and are upon this world. These sufferings and judgments are needful, in order that people will seek after the Lord. Only a remnant will be spared and will seek.

Our job will begin **after** these fires. Nobody will listen now or has been listening. But when the meaning they have placed upon life has perished or lost its appeal, then will they become earnest in seeking the imperishable.

I think the Lord has told me that then is when it will begin for me. Until then, I writhe in the fires upon me, feeling helpless, desperate, yet not without hope. Is that hope groundless or vain? Could be. I don't really know. But I think some of this is hope for what was, and it must go. What was is destined to be gone forever, and the new must replace the old. The new will be much better. Truly, the old is not desirable at all. God forbid that I should return to the old. In fact, I'd sooner have the present pain.

So, in a nutshell, there's no saving of souls now. They will not listen. That is the reason or purpose of the coming tribulation/persecution/judgment/fire. They will know that the Lord has loved me and has been with me. Then will they come seeking and worshipping. With humility and meekness, and not pride and stiff necks, will they come, saying, **"Not my will but Yours be done,"** rather than the reverse.

### Particle - The Wrath to Come

After a terrible night, it came to me that at the farm, we had a bunch of spiritual "I'll tell you touch-me-nots" - no humility, only pride; no love, only selfishness; no meekness, only impudence. I feel the wrath there again, and God will not, cannot, allow things to continue.

"Lord Jesus, I don't ask You to spare us in our sins, even though we temporarily repent. Instead, I ask You to make a clean sweep of us and do what You must do, and get it over with. Instead of three years or three months, Lord, make it three days. Let us fall into Your hands. Lord, cleanse us any way You must, but cleanse us, and hasten it also, Lord."

### Particle - A Promise of Cleansing and Victory

The Lord answered: *"Thus says the Lord: I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and whom I will, I will harden. I have removed and I will remove whom I will. The dust in the balances is in My hand. I weigh all out and determine the finish of all things. I will soak you and saturate you in oil and set you on fire, because you have requested it of Me. And I will do according to the heart's desire of all those who ask of Me. None will be refused. I will make a swift cleansing of all things and everyone. You will rejoice at it. You have sought for deliverance and, behold, it is yours; I have given it to you. There is no command now, no requirement, no condition now. All is finished."*

“Lord, Your will be done in earth as it is in Heaven.”

### Particle - Twelve Years

It was in 1984, 12 years after the [dream](#) in 1972 of His coming, that the Lord [revealed to me](#) who walked with Him in the dream. Jesus was 12 when He knew He must be about His Father’s business and 30 when He began His ministry eighteen years later. If our times were to be paralleled in that respect, the 30<sup>th</sup> year would be 2002.

### Particle - A Horrible Husband

“Husbands, love your wives even as Christ loved the Church and gave Himself for it,” the Bible teaches. I was a horrible husband, if I should be called one at all. I was so often angry, impatient, intolerant, inconsiderate, stubborn, selfish, stupid, brutish, crude, miserable, insensitive, proud, impetuous, sulky, chintzy, and more.

Marilyn hoped to have a husband that loved and cared for her, one with whom she could feel safe, comfortable, confident, and reassured; one from whom she could receive sympathy and affection. To my shame, she found none of these things with me. Is it any wonder she searched elsewhere for fulfillment?

And I thought of myself as a man of God? Frankly, I was dead. I was a selfish, egotistic, foolish, total jerk, a jackass of the first order, mean, sick, bound, unbelieving, hypocritical, and false.

I failed utterly as a husband, broke my vows the day we married, and Marilyn had every right to leave me. Under God, she was free because I never was a husband to her. By my attitude and conduct, I killed her as a wife. “Til death do us part”? Death has parted us - I killed her with everything I was and did. I should have been able to see her pain and disappointment. I should have cared, sacrificed, compromised, and given myself to her. I had no idea, no capacity for good, no love, nothing.

### Particle - Prophecy to Janice Noji Questionable

On September 19, 1999, I recalled, and was struck with a “panic attack” about, the prophecy to [Dr. Janice Noji](#). This would not be the first time I had doubted it to be of God. Looking it up, I found it took place in April of 1996. It was at a time when Lois and I received, independently, both within two weeks, that Deuteronomy 18:20-22 spoke of me as a false prophet (as well as Deuteronomy 13:1-5):

**“But if I haven’t spoken, and a prophet claims to have a message from me, you must kill that prophet, and you must also kill any prophet who claims to have a message from another god. You may be asking yourselves, ‘How can we tell if a prophet’s message really comes from the LORD?’ You will know, because if the LORD says something will happen, it will happen. And if it doesn’t, you will know that the prophet was falsely claiming to speak for the LORD. Don’t be afraid of any prophet whose message doesn’t come from the LORD” (Deuteronomy 18:20-22 CEV).**

A little over five months after the prophecy to Janice, Marilyn [prophesied](#) that the Lord was taking me.

I discussed this with the people at the farm, saying the prophecy to Noji must have been false. They all disagreed. I didn't expect that her business would fail outwardly but spiritually. Outwardly, it might flourish, the appearance contradicting the prophecy, but in the spiritual realm (as often happens), Janice would lose the excitement, inner peace, joy, and fulfillment in her work.

Doubting, I decided I would write Janice and confess my fault and wrong, until I began to consider other points. When Moses offended, God immediately spoke to him and told him his fault and what He would do about it. When Saul offended, he too was immediately told what God would do. When David was confronted on his sin, he was told what would come. When Solomon strayed, God made it known to him.

In my case, I was told that the Lord was taking me, without condemnation, and that He had a glorious ministry prepared for me, like that of Moses at the mount of transfiguration. Did that sound like the end of a false prophet?

I also considered that Dr. Noji refused treatment to Archie and his family, despite her Hippocratic oath. Archie didn't prophesy or deliberately offend her in any way. She professed faith in Christ. Would Christ do what she did to her brothers and sisters in Christ, assuming her faith was genuine? Would He react that way? Would He not turn the other cheek?

I concluded that the enemy was trying me, persuading me that the appearance of things proved me false, and that I needed to go on, in faith that the Lord would make all things clear to me in due time. I concluded the prophecy was fulfilled.

### **Particle - Revelation on Danny's Dream of 1996**

At this point, as I write this Part from my 1999 journal record, I just received an understanding of [Danny's dream](#) of 1996. I didn't understand it at the time I recorded the dream, in 1999.

**Interpretation:** I was the one driving the tractor and Archie was the man behind it. His children were the fertilizer bags he was beating. I reversed the tractor over him and one of the children (I recall that he had once severely spanked his son Chris, at which I was appalled. I was responsible for it in a certain respect, though I didn't know about it and wouldn't have approved its severity). The developments at the farm soon reversed on Archie, forcing him to leave. He and his family left the farm because I asked him to leave, everyone agreeing and urging that I do so. This was the fulfillment of the dream.

As for there being another tractor working the field without bags in the background, there would be a present and a future farm operation, one red and one green, very different from each other. I believe the main tractor was red and the one in the background was green, but I'm not sure.

### **Particle - The Dark Side a Must**

Without experiencing it, it's impossible to understand what it's like to be alone, lonely, depressed, forsaken by a wife, longing for a son. It's impossible to understand loss, defeat, failure, the consequences of greed, of lust, of foolishness, and of gathering up treasure on earth. It's impossible to understand anything, negative or positive, without experiencing it. So, beyond my will or effort, I've been subjected to these things - to vanity. As the Scripture says, **"...not willingly but by reason of Him Who has subjected the same in hope..." (Romans 8:20-21).**

Of Jesus, the Bible says:

**“For we do not have a High Priest Who cannot be touched with the feelings of our infirmities, but was in all points tempted just as we are, yet without sin” (Hebrews 4:15 MKJV).**

Having experienced the dark side, it then says of Him:

**“Looking to Jesus the Author and Finisher of our faith, Who for the joy that was set before Him endured the cross, despising the shame, and sat down at the right of the throne of God” (Hebrews 12:2 MKJV).**

Death seals the power and prepares the way to life.

### Particle - The Man of Sin in Process of Destruction

A journal entry:

I had another terrible night last night, but was able to come through by being given to remember that the Lord is the Source of all, that He is sovereign.

Yes, I am that fool, the simple one who passes on and is punished, the one who hastes with his feet, acts without counsel, and “buys the farm” (an expression used in the World Wars for pilots who were killed). I am the one born April Fools’ Day, the loser, the self-righteous hypocrite, the seed of Nimrod, who built Babel, proving so by my works and fruits.

But God is destroying that “me,” that wicked one, that son of perdition who, as described in Isaiah 14 as the King of Babylon, with the name of Lucifer, “smote the people in wrath with a continual stroke - he that ruled the nations *in anger...*” (Danny’s dream, Archie’s vision, Marilyn’s warnings to me, and my vision of the man hit in the forehead, killed and lowered into the grave, which seemed very deep, if not bottomless). This is that anti-Christ, the first Adam being destroyed in me, nothing spared.

I thought my destruction was completed at the end of my major fast of August 1997, then at the end of my second fast, February 6, 1998, then November 10, 1998, and at other times previous and since. I thought Lois’ vision of my shooting out of the cloud of darkness was fulfilled. None is done. I’m still in Hell and horrible torment... with fear, regret, chagrin, anxiety, loneliness, desolation, misery, darkness, and **“weeping and gnashing of teeth.”** Yes, I am in outer darkness and confounded.

The battle I saw in the two battle visions years ago rages on. It is the battle for my life. The farm is Babel, yet it’s something the Lord is doing. I’m wicked, yet there is that new man, too.

Les and Gene came speaking truth. They saw the evil going on with Marilyn and Sean; they said I wouldn’t be dying, and they saw the farm as Babylon, the works of men. They were right, yet they were wrong. Satan was right in what he said would happen to Adam and Eve if they partook of the Tree of knowledge. He was right in what he said to Jesus in the temptations, but he was in the wrong. If we had listened to Les and Gene’s counsel, we would not only lose the farm, but our souls, as well.

We have been sent strong delusion that we should believe a lie because we took pleasure in unrighteousness, not loving the truth. There is a mixture of the old Adam and the new creature in Christ. When the Lord is done, there will be no more mixture, yet the two will be one new man. The spirit will be divided from the soul (Hebrews 4:12), the message will be clear, and the fruit pure.

## ***Page 4***

### **Particle - The Mills Visit Again**

The [Mills](#) came, spending about five hours telling us about the [Knorrs](#) and [Ogdens](#). The Ogdens were suffering unemployment, poverty, and even plagues of lice, wherein the family was forced to shave their heads, Amanda included.

It was my opportunity to ask Penny about a dream Les said she had about me. Penny was reluctant to tell me but, finally, with some pressing, she said the dream indicated that we were all on the same plane and equal in status.

The Lord had instructed me to be patient with them, but to give them nothing more by way of information. I saw that they believed nothing I had ever said to them. Les was traveling in Ontario and elsewhere, seeing himself as a minister of God with the gift of discernment. He insisted that the Lord was leading him, that we were all equals, that whatever happened to us would be a corporate event, including everyone, and that, finally, he was expecting the “big crunch” to come. They had sold their ranch near Cardston and were looking for another.

The crunch would come all right, but little did he know it would be in a way he didn’t expect. I have so often found that when I’ve expected judgment to come on others, be it a person, community, or nation, that judgment was coming for me. I’ve also seen where people expected judgment on others only to find it coming on them.

Jonathan came to me with a word of knowledge or wisdom concerning the Mills when they left. He said, *“Dad, I think they were lying to you, not in words but by the way they were.”* Surely, he spoke truly.

When the Mills left, they seemed perplexed, as though their mission wasn’t accomplished or were confronted with something they didn’t expect.

### **Particle - Mark Ogden’s Dream: Marilyn and Lois**

Mark and Amanda Ogden would call to say they loved me in Christian love, trying to “reach” me. Now Mark called and related a dream he had wherein he saw Lois and Marilyn dragging a full garbage bag in a back alley. It was a wintry scene with hard packed snow. “Dirty” blood was coming out of tears in the bag and refuse was spilling out as they went along. They dragged the bag through the midst of Mark Ogden, his mother-in-law, and others who were with him, and continued on.

He didn’t know how to interpret the dream, but he found it significant particularly because of my letters to them. He said they left Amanda and him in turmoil and he said the dream gave them peace. They rejected my letters as focusing on their weaknesses and the dream justified them.



My interpretation, if the dream is of God (not sure it was), would be that Lois and Marilyn were instruments used of God to do some dirty work and cleanse us all of bad blood, which cleansing was sorely needed. While it appeared to be an evil thing, the women meaning it for evil, it was in fact good, God meaning it for good. Being our enemies, Ogdens wouldn't take it that way.

I believe they concluded that Lois and Marilyn were doing evil in our midst and that I was one of their victims.

They **were** doing evil, and I **was** one of their victims. Lois and Marilyn were doing evil, primarily because they were exercising spiritual and psychological control over everyone, inspired by evil motivations of the lusts of their flesh, and in some respects, being rather ruthless about it, which seemed, of course, entirely out of place in God's economy of things; however, we all had judgment coming to us, and it is ever a two-edged sword.

But while the Ogdens received revelation, how were **their** lives performing? Mark had declared bankruptcy once, failing to pay due GST taxes to the government. Did that give him a necessary wake-up call? Not at all. At this time, he wasn't working, they were in unserviceable debt again, and they were poor to the extent that their young children were suffering malnutrition.

He refused to work even when I offered it to him, yet he accepted free farm produce from us, and that rather ungraciously and ungratefully. While it's true the work I offered him paid low wages at the farm (the farm not being a paying enterprise at the time), it didn't dawn on him that he could even help without expecting pay; we certainly could have used the help. At least it would have given him some activity to put away his cigarettes and pull his fat body out of the recliner he loved so much.

He wouldn't listen to any counsel coming his way to help him; he would only accept charity. And Les Mills justified him in the tax predicament, as though it was tyrannical of the government to require those taxes of him. Obviously, it was "another Jesus" they were serving, contrary to the One Who said, **"Render unto Caesar the things that are Caesar's and unto God the things that are God's" (Mark 12:17).**

And Mark smoked, justifying himself in his filthy habit, claiming that by sharing a cigarette with unbelievers, it constituted a bridge to reach them with the Gospel.

**"Dreamers fantasize their self-importance; they think they are smarter than a whole college faculty" (Proverbs 26:16 MSG).**

**"A lazy person says, 'I am smarter than everyone else'" (Proverbs 26:16 CEV).**

He went into politics with Alberta First Party purposing to run for election. Here was a man so full of himself that he presumed to change the country for the better, yet failed to pay his dues, as the Bible exhorts, and starved his own family in laziness:

**"For even when we were with you, we commanded you this, that if anyone would not work, neither should he eat" (2 Thessalonians 3:10 MKJV).**

I bring all this up concerning these people because we have a world full of hypocrites, professors of faith in Christ who have nothing to do with Him. They are the liars of whom Jesus said:

**“And watch as I take those who call themselves true believers but are nothing of the kind, pretenders whose true membership is in the club of Satan—watch as I strip off their pretensions and they’re forced to acknowledge it’s you that I’ve loved” (Revelation 3:9 MSG).**

#### Particle - A Prayer for Delores

Strangely, contrary to my doctrine and understanding, I was moved to pray, on September 28, 1999, for [Delores Molnar](#), who passed away in 1988 - eleven years before. Can we not pray for the dead? Who says we can’t or shouldn’t? I see nothing in Scripture to disagree with it. Are we who are in the Spirit limited in time or space, seeing the Spirit of the Lord isn’t limited?

#### Particle - Cursing My Father

I recalled cursing my father some years ago. I was so angry with him and his obstinacy toward me that I said if I saw him in my backyard, I might take a rifle and shoot him, and I cursed him. How horrible! Oh, the depths of wickedness that lay dormant in our hearts! Was that where my troubles began? The Scriptures say:

**“And he that curses his father or his mother shall surely be put to death” (Exodus 21:17 MKJV).**

**“Whoever curses his father or his mother, his lamp shall be put out in deep darkness” (Proverbs 20:20 MKJV).**

#### Particle - The Law’s Consequences Irrevocable

While we don’t enforce such laws in our Western society as in Moses’ day, or render like punishment, it has been revealed to me that we experience spiritually the same consequences of breaking God’s Law as sinners did in ancient Israel. The Scriptures simply teach us the effects that breaking the Law of God has on us. No matter how wrong my father may have been, I had no right to curse him. I visited death upon myself by breaking God’s Fifth Commandment to honor father and mother. I repented of cursing my father some time ago.

#### Particle - Seeing Myself

The Lord showed me that I was utterly guilty of every sin, including all those worthy of death. I cursed my earthly father and deserved death. I cursed my Heavenly Father and deserved even worse. I cursed my wife and all others.

I went greedily after reward as did Balaam, and he died for it. I have been unthankful, unholy, proud, haughty, implacable, boastful, a drunkard and glutton, a sluggard, lording it over others, critical, judgmental, without natural affection, unbelieving, blasphemous, disobedient to my Heavenly Parents, a false accuser, certainly incontinent (ever exploding in rage), fierce, a lover of pleasure, an adulterer, ever looking at other women, time and time again, and covetous. Had I not **“crept into houses and led captive silly women who were laden with sins,”** such as Lois and Kerri? Had I not been **“ever learning and never able to come to a knowledge of the Truth”?**

Had not my Day of Judgment come and all my sins brought before me? Were not the books now being opened on me? Did I have anything to say in my defense? No, nothing. I had but one hope,

that the Lord would redeem me (I was supposed to believe that He had already, yet I saw that I had yet to be delivered).

### **Particle - No Need Too Great for God**

On the morning of October 5<sup>th</sup>, as I was praying, I received that our provision is not according to how cheap or for how little we can get things, but according to God's capacity to provide. His capacity is infinite. We are so silly, yes wicked, to worry about money matters, not that we should be reckless or irresponsible. Let the government tax us, the lawyers rip us off, the dealers overcharge, and the thieves steal (as did Judas from the common purse). We will be none the worse for it. In fact, with right attitude, we will be increased, not diminished. We will grow and come to realize the completeness and inexhaustibility of God's treasure house, available for meeting our every need, physical and spiritual, temporal and eternal.

### **Particle - Who Can Argue with the Dates?**

As I went for a walk, praying, it again came to me that when the Lord [came to me](#) on February 6, 1998, it was a conception. Four days later, I felt [Noah's dread](#) as he entered the ark.

The following **November 10<sup>th</sup>** was **40 months** from the day we first [viewed the farm](#) for purchase; it was the first anniversary of [Bob's dream](#) of the Lord's coming for me; finally, it was the day ("10<sup>th</sup> day of the 11<sup>th</sup> month") Noah ended total confinement in the ark by opening the window and sending forth a raven and a dove. The total period from February 10<sup>th</sup> to **November 10<sup>th</sup>** is **nine months**, the gestation period.

It was on **November 10<sup>th</sup>** when I said I was [finished](#) with the prophecy. It seems the prophecy was a form of ark for me, which ark represents death. The ark's dimensions and proportions resemble that of a coffin. The proportions, I'm told, match that of the human body.

Did the man child come forth on **November 10<sup>th</sup>**? The [synagogue of Satan](#) was there, through the Mills, Knorrs, Ogdens, and Knelsens, ready to devour me. And the man child was caught up to safety, unto God and His throne, there being warfare in Heaven at that time, as my [two war visions](#) showed years ago. The pieces all fit.

### **Particle - Earthly and Heavenly Police**

What a difference there is between earthly and Heavenly police! I recall once driving on the Shellbrook Highway to Prince Albert in 1976 when I spotted an RCMP cruiser that had passed me do a power turn and follow me at a distance for a half mile or so, finally abandoning my trail. He was out to get me, not personally, but generally. On earth police lay traps; it is what they know to do their jobs. I don't condemn or envy them. Their powers are limited.

I recalled the [dream](#) I had in 1976 of the Patricks and Dave Grier. The Heavenly police pulled Marilyn and me over because we were going against traffic. They were there to protect and help, not penalize, exercising a positive influence and correction. Yet they let Dave and the Patricks go on.

I recalled a drunken party a Tycholiz woman had in her suite at Thorndale Apartments in Dauphin in 1977. It was disturbing everyone in the block well into the morning. I called the police. A female constable answered and would do nothing unless I revealed my identity and it was submitted to the

host of the party. My car was parked near the entrance and if they knew who complained, my car could be vandalized. I didn't understand why my identity needed to be disclosed.

All the police had to do was check the party for themselves (it was only a block or two from their station) and see that I wasn't making things up. The constable would do nothing for me. I hung up the phone in frustration, resigned to suffering wrong because there was nothing I could do about it.

I recalled the incident at Manipogo Beach north of Dauphin, where there was an unruly camper next to us and we had nobody to whom we could report. We paid our weekend fees and were stuck with their nuisance.

George Kush, the man who [betrayed me](#) at the [Moon River conflagration](#) of November 10, 1989, was accustomed to speeding by our place to the horse paddocks. There were often young children dashing about, so one day I flagged him down and *respectfully* asked him to control his speed for the children's sakes. His wife, Josephine, was with him. He said he would do so. He also cryptically said he would watch out for me, too.

Minutes later he called, in a rage, railing and cursing: "Hey, Moses, you little shit, you! The next time you wanna talk to me, you talk to me privately and not in front of my family, okay? You got that, you little shit? I'm gonna come over there and kick the shit out of you! You're gonna make a fool out of me in front of my family? Don't you ever do that again, you hear me, you son of a bitch? You little shit? You got that? You got that?"

My reply: "George, why are you so worked up? My son's life and that of the neighbors' children is the issue here! I thought I was very civil with you!"

Apparently his ego was as a balloon pricked, producing a loud bang. I told him that my request of him was quite reasonable and that his call of obscenity and threats was illegal. He continued to curse. I told him that if he thought what I did was worse than his speeding endangering children, then his thinking was perverse. I said "Goodbye, George," and hung up on him.

He was so volatile I decided to call the Fort MacLeod RCMP. There I got the second female police officer for as many police calls as I've made in my life. It was a Constable Andres, who asked for a letter of complaint and promised to contact him. When she did talk to him, he denied everything. She said the incident would be on record and closed the file - it was his word against mine, I guess. I knew the police had bigger fish to fry than these kinds of disputes, though who could tell where such might lead, given George's spirit?

I recalled how on November 10, 1989, George declared so proudly, "And I don't lie!" even while he was lying. God would deal with him in due time in a way I hadn't expected.

The guiltiest deny most emphatically the vices that bind them, and most sincerely claim the countering virtues. Beware when one says, "I am a reasonable person." It is a very unwarranted and most unreasonable claim.

I recall the many incidents with the Arnolds where I could have called the police but didn't do it. God would deal a severe blow to them that I neither desired nor imagined.

**Particle - No Help in Earthly Police**

What was the Lord showing me? He was showing me that just as I was never to ask or depend on any man for money, so I couldn't depend on the earthly police or other earthly institutions for any help. "My help is in the Name of the Lord," said the psalmist, and I had to be of one heart and soul with him. The Lord's angelic police are far more ready and willing to help, and perfectly effective.

I even wonder if they can barely be restrained from any opportunity to help those they're assigned to help (Hebrews 1:14).

### Particle - Wives Casting Off Husbands

I've heard of men being unfaithful to their wives, and undoubtedly, it's often the case. However, what I've seen far more often is that women leave their husbands. In my childhood, I remember three divorces. In each case the women left the men - Olga left Nick Atamanchuk, Bill Panko's wife left him, and Alice Michayluk left Bill. In each case, the men were devastated. In school and college, Lydia Kisel left her husband, Pat Dennis left fiancé Bob Southam, Florence Yaschyshyn left Eugene Gawadziuk, and Gerry McClintock's fiancée left him. While there were other examples of men leaving women, only one comes to mind - Gerry's cousin, Don McLeod, left his wife.

In the past few years of this writing, neighbor Peter Webber's wife left him for an internet acquaintance; a potter and school teacher (Matisz) was abandoned by his wife; Lynn Patrick left her husband, Mickey, for another man after 20 years of marriage and two children. All three men were obviously hurt.

Are men today up in arms against women? Isn't it the other way around? Is there such a thing as a masculist movement? Beware and judge discreetly the complaint of victims!

I watched a CJIL program called *Lifeline*, hosted by Dick and Joan Deweert. A married couple spoke of what went wrong in their marriage and how they redeemed it. She spoke of how she had grown to hate her husband and was praying for God to change him. She had pinned all her hopes on him, expecting that he would fulfill all her needs and longings. It didn't happen, and she became bitter. He grew worse until she began to realize that her faith should have been in God alone, that only He could be her fulfillment.

They said a prime cause of divorce was that spouses entered marriage expecting fulfillment, emotionally and every other way, from the partner. Not finding it, they sought another partner. But God never intended for people to look to their partner as the source of fulfillment.

The couple also pointed out that as partners became divided in their goals and occupations, they grew further apart from each other. We bought the farm. Gradually, Marilyn took over control of it, and now, in her occupation, she found someone else and cast me off.

Why do the Scriptures counsel men not to be bitter against their wives and not the other way around? Why was I born of a bitter woman (my mother)? Why did I marry bitterness incarnate?

***"And I find more bitter than death the woman whose heart is snares and nets, and her hands like bands. Whoever pleases God shall escape from her, but the sinner shall be taken by her" (Ecclesiastes 7:26 MKJV).***

I have not pleased God.

### Particle - Moves of God?

One morning, I awoke troubled, having recalled a phone call I had with [Jim Flynn](#). He was telling me of whole cities in Columbia being won to the Lord through fasting and prayer. I heard that drug cartels were being ousted, their power broken; witchcraft, idolatry, and the occult were being swept away; bars were closing, converted to meeting places for worship. I heard that churches were multiplying, uniting, cooperating, and praying together. People were being healed and saved, and prisons are emptying. City councils were helping people by supplying stadiums and advertising for meetings to preach and worship. Agriculture was becoming many times more fruitful, streets were safe again, and the cities were attracting outsiders.

I heard these amazing things. Were they true? Why was I troubled? It made me feel doomed in terms of having a relationship with God. Here we sat in all kinds of trouble, serving no good and with nothing but evil happening in our midst. Where did I go astray?

Troubled, I prayed. I was reminded of being confronted by this same sort of scenario many times before:

**One**, there was the [Alliance Church](#) revival, but there they had [resisted](#) the Holy Spirit, so what kind of revival?

**Two**, we heard that the Spirit of God was moving in great ways with Bill Kellers and Dave Roberts at Mount Zion Christian Center in Saskatoon. Within a few years, the church had dispersed to the four winds, when it was discovered that Dave and Bill were homosexuals.

**Three**, we thought we were missing out on great things in Winnipeg while [Art and Doreen Beals](#) were there in the middle of it all, rejoicing and marveling at all that was happening. It turned out the preachers were all money hungry, glory-seeking charlatans, and Art was the [devil](#) in my [vision](#), which was fulfilled in 1981.

**Four**, Ernie Chadwick sent me tapes of speakers who were supposed to be in the midst of, and instrumental in, a move of the Spirit - men like Paul Cain and [Rick Joyner](#). It turned out to be empty sensationalism. The “Kansas City Prophets” turned out to be demonic rogues.

**Five**, we had come in contact with the “move of God” in [Winnipeg](#) when returning from Israel. It was a movement of men, not of God. The Lord [told me](#) they were *“children in the gates of the city, neither coming in nor going out.”*

**Six**, the widespread Charismatic movement itself was very exciting and promised great things. We found it to be but chaff in the wind and not only so, but deceptive and devilish, a counterfeit move of God.

**Seven**, there was the “Toronto Blessing” that attracted hundreds of thousands from around the world. We found it to be a [diabolical movement](#).

Had I enough reminders? I realized, as I went for a bike ride, that the stuff I was hearing of Columbia would prove to be another false alarm, children playing and sounding a toy trumpet, imitating the “Last Trump,” works of men with signs and lying wonders to deceive.

The revival in Columbia was supposed to have come by way of much prayer and fasting. But what about the “great revival” in Nineveh? Was there much fasting and prayer there? On the contrary,



Jonah was bitter and preached in bitterness, prophesying destruction. The whole city was saved in a matter of a few days because it was the Lord's work, not man's.

The notion that men must cumulatively fast and spend great energies and time in prayer in order to move God to save souls He loves and for whom He died is a diabolical one. Intense intercessory prayer displays self-righteousness at its worst, impudently pitting man's holiness against God's, to God's shame. He is made out to be a stubborn ogre. Where do we ever find testimonies in Scripture of God moving to save only when people give themselves to prayer and fasting?

I'm not saying we shouldn't pray and fast or that breakthroughs don't come by such; they do; I've had them, several times. I am saying God is not limited by man. Prayer and fasting aren't God.

The parable of the importunate widow pressing on the unjust judge for a favorable judgment is often cited to promote persistent, repetitive prayer. Those referring to this parable fail to realize that importunity is not an act, but an attitude. Fervency is not an act, but an attitude. Jesus is not urging works, but dispositions growing out of a healthy relationship with God through faith and obedience, a knowledge of God and His ways.

### **Particle - Chris Calls**

Surprisingly, Chris Hafichuk called and asked for my music tapes and sheets. It seemed like his request was a pretext or excuse to call. He said he was bartending at Georgio's and taking auto mechanics at Lethbridge Community College. He said he had a second girlfriend and was living in a basement suite with a friend from First Baptist Church where he was attending. Shane Porter, who went to First Baptist, owned the suite. Chris said he tried College Drive Community Church but didn't like it, saying the pastor was too removed. He had also visited Coaldale Christian Fellowship, pastored by Frank Harms.

Chris told me that Nathan didn't go to church anywhere and that he (Chris) was in touch weekly with Archie and Cathie, who were in Kelowna, BC, doing the handyman and inkjet businesses, as previously.

### **Particle - Dorothy Frame Offended**

On October 9<sup>th</sup>, I met with [Dorothy Frame](#). She and her daughters were upset with a letter I sent her in August, confronting her on things she had said concerning God, Jesus Christ, and the Scriptures. She said her daughter, Marjorie, was livid and would never talk to me again. Being that Dorothy didn't have long to live, I wasn't prepared in good conscience to let her pass with the erroneous notions she had, perhaps mainly because she was convinced she was a believer (she was a member of the United Church of Canada). I pointed out her error in a matter-of-fact and direct manner.

After talking to Dorothy, I reviewed the letter and found nothing in it that should offend them, though I knew it could. It convicted them of their wrong and that was their problem.

Within three weeks, I received reports that Dorothy was full of pain, breaking down, miserable, unreasonable, and irascible with those assigned to take care of her needs. At the end, her mind would go before she did. This woman was the one who called me a "bullshitter" when I spoke of God to her some years ago and was offended when I had tried to reason with her for her good. So "bullshit" God made my counsel to her.



## Particle - Cracks in Or-Kids' Foundation

On October 16<sup>th</sup>, while garage-saling, I decided to buy Jonathan some organic ice cream so we dropped in to our bitter competitor's, Or-Kids Organics, the only place it was available. The owner, Cherie Petrie, while displaying a thin veneer of friendliness with me, played her cards close to her chest. I met Cherie's mother, Georgina, and had a brief talk with her, though I noticed she was negatively influenced toward me. This chance meeting would have some future significance.

Meanwhile, it was frustrating, and I wondered why I was so foolish as to go there. Was ice cream worth it? The day would come when we would hear of lies Cherie spoke of us, telling people, for example, that Harvest Haven was not organic. This affected many people, including Trevor and Cindy Aleman, organic producers, who eyed me as some kind of low-level charlatan. We would find chickens coming home to roost for Cherie, her mother, and those with whom she had to do.

## Particle - A Heartbreaking Repetitive Event

I couldn't begin to record all the battles Marilyn and I would have almost every day, some vicious, though not physical (I had purposed to restrain myself and, by God's grace, was able to do so, though barely). On October 17<sup>th</sup>, Jonathan came crying, commanding me to stop fighting. He decided to go to the farm with Marilyn because of me. I reacted to Marilyn while she was in her time of month, a nightmarish time without fail. There was no reasoning with her, and with her tears, she always appeared the innocent victim, deceiving Jonathan.

I hated her for how Jonathan was pained and tried to avoid battle, yet found myself so helpless in my angry reactions to her wickedness. Added to my grief was his conviction that I was the culprit. It made me question myself. Was I the ogre, the unreasonable brute she made me out to be? Could be. How should I make such a judgment, being subjective?

How cursed a thing that Jonathan should suffer this! Regretfully, tragically, we would live to see the fruits of our conflict, and Marilyn would wipe her mouth of them all. Never once did his pain and turmoil seem to bother her. What a wicked, selfish bitch! Would it not have been better for Jonathan if we had parted? Surely! Yet it seemed that God was restraining us from doing so.

Why would I not leave or throw her out? Her adultery was evident to all. How could anyone in his right mind expect me to put up with this? Yet, I knew what the Lord had told me: *"Let it happen."* I had to obey. Was I obeying in spirit as well as in letter? I wondered.

I also wondered why she wasn't divorcing me. I could only conclude she was expecting me to die soon, which is what she firmly believed. I said, "If Sean is your husband, how can you live with me? Why don't you leave? I want you to leave."

Her reply, "That wouldn't be right."

"What? Is it right that we tear Jonathan's heart apart with these horrible battles?" I asked. "Is it right to choose another man as husband, yet live with me, fighting me on nearly every issue at every turn?"

She seemed altogether unconcerned about Jonathan or me or anyone at the farm (constantly complaining about the Bensons) or even her lover, Sean. She only cared for herself. This Scripture hit home to me:

**“Such is the way of an adulterous woman; she eats, and wipes her mouth, and says, I have done no evil” (Proverbs 30:20 MKJV).**

And: **“Like the adulterous wife, instead of her husband, she takes strangers. They give a gift to all harlots, but you give your gifts to all your lovers, and bribe them to come to you from all around, for your fornication” (Ezekiel 16:32-33 MKJV).**

And what was Jonathan supposed to feel, think, and do?

### **Particle - Frequent Aftermath Regrets**

I realized that, soon after Marilyn would leave for the farm, I often felt guilt at how I failed to minister to her while here at home. I also missed her (can you believe it?)! One day, I had to call and tell her so. I told her I missed her, not the tyrant or the bitch or the bitter, miserable one, but the one I once knew.

I remembered being so happy to see her years ago and how [affectionate](#) I became toward her soon after her prophecy saying the Lord was taking me. I had expected to be dying and felt much tenderness and compassion toward her. I see that these last three years had taken their toll on me and how I’ve felt about her. She wasn’t the one I once married and knew, or so I thought.

### **Particle - Lois, the Miscreant**

I saw the word “miscreant” in *Treasure Island* as I read to Jonathan. It stuck with me for some reason, and while I thought it to refer to some unethical, troublesome, undesirable person, I didn’t have a more educated understanding.

Now I thought of the prophecy of my being taken and of how I was expressing my love for Marilyn publicly thereafter, as at the farmer’s market. But I also recalled how Lois had stood by witnessing my doing so and smiling. Unknown to me at the time, she was aware, while I wasn’t, of the prophecy that Marilyn would be marrying Sean. Suddenly, the word “miscreant” was there for me, applying to Lois.

“Miscreant?” I thought. “It doesn’t make sense for her.” Then I looked it up:

**One** - “depraved, villainous, or base....” This was close to my understanding, and I didn’t see it as applying to Lois, though I have seen those things in her, as in a [vision](#) in the 80’s in particular. I recalled how she had often lied, gave excuses, and unjustifiably defended herself. However, the next definitions hit me between the eyes:

**Two** - “misbelieving [not “un-” or “dis-” but “mis-”], holding a false or unorthodox religious belief....” I thought of Lois believing the secret portion of the prophecy and being a whore for doing so, keeping it from me, and choosing sides with Marilyn.

**Three** - “a vicious person....” She had often been rebuked in the past because we saw in her a contemptible partisan spirit (“us vs. them” attitude). I often referred to her as a mauler, a brute, verbally taking an axe to people... vicious?

**Four** - “a misbelieving person, as a heretic or an infidel.”

“heretic” - a professed believer who maintains religious opinions contrary to those accepted by his church....”

“infidelity” - “unfaithfulness, disloyalty.”

I knew the word “miscreant” applied to Lois in all its essence. When I thought of the prophecy, my expression of affection to Marilyn soon after, and Lois’ silence about the second part while witnessing my affection to Marilyn, I was angry. Unfaithfulness and disloyalty were what I thought of.

Now here was a curious thing: How is it I didn’t feel the same way toward Marilyn? After all, wasn’t she primarily responsible? I don’t know that I *ever* felt that way toward her, though I have been angry, jealous, and sorrowful. Somehow, it seemed she wasn’t guilty in the same way as Lois. I didn’t understand, but Lois was particularly guilty of whoredom and infidelity. Just the day before, I said this event was an exposure of all.

When discussing this matter with Lois, she couldn’t deny the truth of it.

## ***Page 5***

### **Particle - Lack of Discipline for Jonathan?**

Lois and Mark perceived and expressed concern that Jonathan was deceitful and lacking discipline. Sean also complained of how we were too lenient on him and of how he misbehaved. Seeing that Jonathan was more with Marilyn and seldom with me, and that he wouldn’t conduct himself in my presence as he would elsewhere, I was at a loss to determine the validity of these concerns.

I often complained of Marilyn’s favoritism toward Jonathan, not in preference to me, but in preference to that which was right and necessary for him from a parent. I was also concerned about her conduct with him. It was more of a “buddy-buddy” relationship than that of a mother and son. She quite often gave him things and privileges I wouldn’t give.

On my part, it seemed I had failed to discern Jonathan’s spiritual needs or fulfill them, whether because I was barely with him anymore, or because I was unwilling to tend to the unsavory duty, or because of Marilyn’s prevalent influence. She home-schooled him for hours a day, and they were together all the time.

To spoil Jonathan would be a great injustice, for which we would pay a fearful price. I’d seen good things with Jonathan but I also saw things that disturbed me.

### **Particle - Dream of Courage, Boldness, Standing Up, Archie an Enemy**

In the night of October 21-22, I had an unpleasant dream. I was confronted with a young false prophet who had seduced perhaps a dozen or so people. He was petty, vindictive, very selfish, and arrogant. If one were to cross him even with a difference in opinion, he wouldn’t tolerate or forgive. It was a scary thing.

I was afraid of him, apologetic, and compromising to the extent that I fully agreed with him, but this wasn’t good enough for him. He was going to have his pound of flesh. I decided that I had to be true to God; there was no profit in compromise, even if the Lord didn’t care, so I decided to confront this fellow.

As I began to withstand him and he began to retaliate, I grew in strength, though still having some trepidation. He picked up a rock and threw it at me. He had little strength so the rock fell low toward my knees. I caught it in my right hand while never taking my eyes off his.

I then closed in on him to lay my right hand on his head, which he strongly resisted but couldn't prevent. I came against the demons in him in the Name of the Lord Jesus Christ. I repeated the Lord's Name one or two times. He went stone dead, not in physical life so much as in mental ability, which paralyzed him physically. He wasn't delivered and I didn't expect to see a redemption, but he was rendered helpless.

Archie was there, playing with a train set. Presumably, he was aware of what was going on, but preferred to be occupied with his play. When I called for his participation, he argued and became quite antagonistic to the point of physically attacking me. He was full of bitterness and devils.

Experiencing once again the same fears I had just had with the previous fellow, I summoned my courage and strength and withstood Archie, rebuking him in the Name of the Lord Jesus. He sneered, grew taller than me, but departed, not able to stand against me.

As Archie was leaving, I saw Mark in the hall outside, carrying away the man I had rendered helpless.

### **Interpretation:**

That fear I experienced is one of lack of faith in the Lord, which leads to compromise and denying Him in everyday life. It had been bothering me, but I was sensing a gradual strengthening and change in me, leading to standing boldly and faithfully in the Lord with everyone, everywhere, and at all times.

This reminded me of Lois' [prophecy](#) I found back in 1984 or 1985. It said:

*"Behold, the time is coming when you will hear blasphemous things spoken about God. You will be tempted with fleshly allurements, but stay on the path that is hardest to endure, for you will know Me only on this path. Be prepared to speak the truth to the beasts and to declare your position and power in the Lord Jesus Christ as the day draws near."*

I felt that preparation and rejoiced in it. I saw where my holding back had been for naught, yet there had to come a time when there would be those who say, "He is beside himself." To everything there's a time and season, as the Bible says, and I was being prepared for the greatest time of my life by far.

Archie was an arch-enemy. He and his family condemned us as a cult and would do everything to oppose and do me evil, outside of perhaps some forms of criminal violence.

We would see if my expectations were true.

**Particle - Lois' Vision: I, in the Lord, Hold Up Hand and Stop Battle**

On Monday, October 25, 1999, Lois had a vision wherein she saw the Lord, or me in the Lord, standing on a high hill with back turned toward her, watching and controlling an ancient battle of armies on horses in a valley. The man lifted up his right hand and the battle ceased.

Lois was about to walk away, but was somehow made aware to remain and see more. She then saw the valley filled with a city full of constructive activity and good works, the very opposite of what had been there before the man stopped the battle. He then turned and walked.

At this time, Lois was going through great internal strife. The battle was within her, and the day I prayed for her just before she began fasting was the raising of my hand in the Lord.

### Particle - Debbie Neu Frowns

Some friends of [Debbie Neu](#) bought some apples from us and she came over to pay for them. She was quite friendly with Marilyn, but when I appeared, she went cold. What sort of fruits do these kinds of attitudes bring forth?

Are the fearful justified? Are those they fear at fault? We would see, as we already so often have.

### Particle - Bitterness toward Marilyn Checked

On October 26<sup>th</sup>, I was still bitter toward Marilyn. I prayed and confessed so. Whether all this was my fault or hers or someone else's, I was still called upon to suffer and pay the price. If guilty, I had nothing to complain about. If I was asked by the Lord to lay down my life for the others, it should be counted a privilege and an honor to serve the Lord so. There was no room for bitterness on my part. If it was nobody's fault, again there was no room for bitterness, as it was therefore the Lord's doing.

### Particle - Reading to Jonathan

By now Jonathan and I had read many translations of the Bible and several other books together. We'd just completed Robert Louis Stevenson's *Treasure Island*, which he much enjoyed, and we were now beginning *Pinocchio*.

### Particle - To Die or Not To Die? What a Question!

Kerri once said she believed I would never die. Jonathan once said he believed I would live forever, that I would never die. Many years before, in the early 70's, I believe, I seemed to be taking the Lord's words of John 11:26 quite literally:

***"And whoever lives and believes in Me shall never die. Do you believe this?" (John 11:26 MKJV)***

Not long ago, the Lord said to me, *"You'll not be dying. Will you believe Me?"* (So similar were those words to the Scripture.) While I interpreted those words to apply only to Marilyn's prophecy, could it be that I would never die? Jesus said it to His disciples, they believed, and they died. Obviously, He wasn't meaning exemption from physical death, but because His words are true and His promises sure, the disciples did experience what He *did* mean. They experienced an outward death of the body, but their inner man would never perish.

Nevertheless, it now came to me that when the Lord spoke those words to me, He meant them for all time, quite physically. My body argued against this interpretation - it continued to deteriorate quite normally, if not faster than usual, not that I couldn't be "changed in the twinkling of an eye."

### Particle - Translation?

Enoch never died physically and neither did Elijah. One desire I have always had was to be translated as they were, if only for the fun of what those left behind would face trying to explain my disappearance to the authorities or the authorities trying to prove or comprehend anything!

Certainly a motive could be established - it would seem my wife wanted me dead. But where the weapon, the body, the mode of crime, or any evidence of one? Imagine the incredulity of the truth when told it, their frustration at trying to prove the testimony false, or their perplexity at witnessing the perfectly sincere reports. Can the witnesses all be "crazy"? Ha!

Obviously, this motive for a translation isn't good enough for God. But I want it for any legitimate reason, though it doesn't really matter if it's not His will.

### Particle - Reading the Bible with Jonathan

On November 5<sup>th</sup>, Jonathan and I ate some spoiled watermelon and were ill within minutes. We both vomited it up, felt weak then progressively better, had some genuine ginger ale, which helped noticeably, had breakfast, and read the Bible.

I read Exodus 26 through 29 to him and he was keen, asking questions about the Tabernacle, its dimensions and their sizes, the gold, the ark, and the precious stones. He then asked me to read in First Samuel, where the people asked for a king and God gave them one, not according to His will, but theirs.

"How did Moses remember all those instructions as to the details of how to build everything?" Jonathan asked.

Good question. I had often wondered that myself. "It was given him to remember," I replied, marveling. It didn't occur to me to point out to Jonathan that when receiving the instructions on the mount, Moses had fasted for forty days. I recalled how my memory was marvelously improved after my 25 days of fasting, so much so that, months later, at the end of 1997, when I wrote a summary of the year, I was able to recall significant people and details in their order.

A few years later, when reviewing the summary, I was amazed, wondering how anyone could do such a thing! But I did it, and I believed my fasting had facilitated my memory.

### Particle - Blessings of the Deep

One night and in it, I realized I was experiencing the fulfillment of the Word of the Lord spoken to me in the mid 80's, saying, *"Even the deeps will be a blessing to you, My son."* I was finding myself appreciating what I once hated - the rejection, the solitude, the stripping of my life. I couldn't explain it - it wasn't that I really enjoyed it, but it **was** a blessing, not a curse, as I once saw it.

I understood more about what Hannah Hurnard was trying to say in *Hind's Feet in High Places*. She, as expressed in her main character, Much Afraid, saw that Sorrow and Suffering were turning out to be strong, faithful, and enjoyable companions, from whom she once shrank. When she learned to accept them, they were eventually transformed to Peace and Joy, even as she herself was transformed to Grace and Glory.

The things I once feared, I was no longer afraid of. Instead, I was thankful.

### **Particle - Total Consecration**

This day, I repeated in a still deeper way, it seems, "Lord, I want to be the representation of You on earth, utterly Yours, everywhere, at all times, in everything, before all, totally faithful and devoted, totally committed to Your concerns. I want to be as You on earth towards all men. I want to be Your heart's desire, judgment, expression, and righteousness, a complete vessel devoted entirely for Your own personal possession, not only in this world but everywhere.

"I can't make it happen. I know I'm not there but this I desire above all things. All other things gathered together in a great bundle are not worthy to be compared to this.

"I will never be satisfied until this is fulfilled, Lord. Let there be not a speck of compromise or shortcoming in me for Your sake, Lord. I desire to be Your manifestation to this world in all integrity, purity, and holiness."

I recalled the Lord granting me a [free life](#) to be used by Him, for Him, to address His concerns while He would take care of mine. I didn't even have to ask for my concerns - they were taken care of. To ask for mine would be to be preoccupied and therefore less than perfectly available for His concerns. "Father, Your will be done in earth, not mine; Yours, as it is in Heaven. Yes, amen."

### **Particle - Islam, Allah, Muhammad, the Koran, and the Hadith**

In a video produced by Stan Johnson's The Prophecy Club, Avi Lipkin spoke of the nature and agenda of Islam. According to him, Islam believes Jesus will return as a Muslim and will destroy all Jews and Christians unless they serve Muhammad. They believe all Jews must be exterminated. Jews and Christians are together called the "people of the book," one people. They claim Jesus will destroy all churches and synagogues. These things are recorded in the Hadiths - the Muslim oral law - which are there for anyone to access for themselves.

Allah is the pagan moon god (hence the crescent), the war god of the heathen in Saudi Arabia. He is a god of the sword, the spear, and the bow and arrow. Muslims aim for one world government under Islam, devoted to Allah and Muhammad.

Avi said that Steve Emerson has a death sentence on him (fatwa) for exposing the true nature and agenda of Islam, as expressed in a movie he made, likely *Jihad in America*, 1994, including clips of secret Muslim meetings in America. In many places in the world, Muslims are slaughtering both Jews and nominal Christians.

As I read the Quran, I find that the laws of Allah are conveniently conditional. One can kill, commit adultery, rape, commit pedophilia, and beat wives, even if there is no evidence or proof of guilt against the victims, all by sanction of the Quran and the Hadiths.

### **Particle - November 10, 1999**



Here it is, **November 10<sup>th</sup>** again, and though there seems to be no noteworthy event, I did speak some meaningful things to Marilyn. There was an abiding sense in me that all was done. I recalled last November 10<sup>th</sup>, wherein I knew I was done with the prophecy, and that it ended a human gestation period of nine months or 40 weeks, counting back to February 10<sup>th</sup>, as [explained](#). As well, the Lord had notified me on several occasions and ways that all was finished.

Reminded of these things, I saw that I was a newborn infant, now a year old. I saw that just as Satan had disputed over Moses' body, so the dragon waited for me, seeking to devour me the moment I came forth, but as the man child is caught up to Heaven, so have I been taken by the Lord and am made safe from the [synagogue of Satan](#) that came to derail the spiritual development occurring with me.

Even Penny Mills said something happened on November 10, 1998. The Mills came eight days after [Day 777](#). Five weeks after Day 777, the Mills and Knorrs came with [Trudy Lazet](#) (the troubled woman who had been abused and abandoned by her husband), at which time I told them this was the Coming of the Lord and the Day of His Gathering. I told them the sign of the Son of man was the laying down of the life, which I was doing for them. Three days later, Lois had a [vision](#) of Les and Gene lassoed tight, back-to-back, and helpless.

**More dates:** The day came (Day 846) when Marilyn [declared](#) to Les and Gene, "I stand with Victor." This day was 88 days back to another major [visit](#) on Day 758 with Les, 88 days forward to [another](#) with Les on Day 933 (including those dates would total 176 days - 2 X 88). Day 846 is 280 days (70 X 4 or 40 X 7) back to April 12 when they [first came](#).

Four hundred and ninety (7 X 70) days after February 6, 1998, on Day 990, Jonathan had a [prophecy and vision](#) expressing that all was returning to God. The following day, I had the [vision](#) of the man slain, and a bundle rising from the grave and taken up into Heaven.

### **Particle - The Man Child**

All these things point to the birth of the man child, as recorded in Revelation 12. He now waits, grows, and develops. How long would it be? I didn't know and it didn't matter. Suffice it to say that, in Christ, I would rule over the nations with a rod of iron (the Truth). I do have a new name; I eat of the hidden manna; I am granted to sit on my Lord's throne; I am made a pillar in the Temple of my God and shall no more go out; I shall not be hurt by the second death.

The Lord said, *"You'll not be dying. Will you believe Me?"* - "I will not blot out his name out of the Book of Life," is what that is saying. The Lord does confess me before His Father and the angels in Heaven. That explains why I am so hungry and zealous to confess His Name before all men. I now have the Morning Star, the ushering in of a new day. It is morning. I eat of the Tree of Life, which is in the presence of God Almighty, Jesus Christ.

### **Particle - Lois' Vision: I Rising from Altar and Gathering People**

On November 4<sup>th</sup> or 5<sup>th</sup>, 1999, Lois had a vision wherein she saw me rise from an altar upon which I had been lying, and I began to, literally, with my hands, gather people. She received on **November 10<sup>th</sup>**, around the time of this vision, that the lying in state was done. On the 12<sup>th</sup>, she received the same as I, yet independently of me, that all was done. We have received confirmation on a few matters this way. She also received that she was to declare the deliverance of the Lord, that she was to shout it. Yes.

## **Particle - Mariko Writes of Visions**

On November 10<sup>th</sup>, Mark handed me a letter from [Mariko](#), which he translated. She was lost and confused, not knowing what to do with herself in Japan. In her struggles, she had a vision wherein she saw Mark with his back to her. He was steadily walking away from her. She tried catching up, but in vain, thinking, "I guess this is it; Mark will be separated from me." Then suddenly, she saw the two of them in a wedding scene and thought, "This is weird. How can I marry Mark who was separated from me?" She wrote it off as imagination.

She was determined to wait on the Lord to see what He would have her do with her life. She apologized to Mark for often hurting him, thanked him for everything, said that she would not forget him, and said that she was praying for everyone at the farm.

## **Particle - Trevor a Constant Vexation**

Trevor was a great vexation - Mr. Self-Gratification - and the enemy knows his quarry. Months before, Nathan asked Trevor if he was going to leave the farm. Arnold Willms also questioned Trevor. Satan smells weakness and tries it. Some stand and some don't. I feared Trevor was utterly consumed with himself, possessed with self-gratification. Unless the Lord did something, he was vulture meat - Mr. Vanity Incarnate. Few have I known to be so focussed on serving and glorifying themselves; Trevor was a legend in his own mind, seeking praise and adulation, ready to marry anything, skirt or no skirt.

## **Particle - Confession of Gathering for Myself**

I had gathered for my own sake. I preached and witnessed to build my own kingdom, to have power over others and glory and honor of them. I have prayed, labored, and fasted to control, to take pleasure, to be heard.

Even now, as I went out to witness, it was with the hope that people would come and serve me and my interests, that they might work on the farm and provide for me. I hoped that they would gather around *me*. I was so ashamed of this but didn't know what to do. "**May the Lord grant me a pure heart, one that is to truly serve Him in all piety, holiness, righteousness, and truth.**"

## **Particle - Mark Humbled in Montreal and Given a Promise**

Mark gave a presentation in Montreal and reported that he was severely criticized by feminist chairwomen. I told him that whereas the world could criticize him in failing according to their standards and on their grounds, the day would come when they would again attempt to fault him, this time unjustifiably, and he would turn the tables on them. In a setting where it would be said, "Nobody does that sort of thing, it's very impolite, entirely out of etiquette, etc." he would be standing and judging them. It would be his turf the next time, even though it be a setting of the world.

**Editor's Note:** Over the years since this time in 1999 (I write now in 2015), we've learned that Mark highly exaggerated everything. His mother would often say, "Whatever comes from Mark, cut it in half, then in half again." We see that now.

## **Particle - Another Bout of Self-Abhorrence**

I was experiencing abhorrence for the person I had been all my life. There seemed to be no line between my life before Christ and after. I was equally ashamed of both periods and had, I suppose, more reason for shame in the period after receiving the Spirit.

But was I not forgiven? Why all this shame and abhorrence now? Was I back in the flesh, dealing in its ways? For example, if there were legal problems with the neighbors, did I resort to prayer or police? Recently, the police.

Did I resort to turning the other cheek or did I return railing? Railing, apparently, as I angrily blasted Den Hertog for cutting the branches on our trees out of season, without permission. If my neighbor appeared mad, did I think of demonic possession and exorcism or at least binding the spirits as a solution, or did I think of mental illness as the problem and medical treatment as a solution? The latter, apparently.

Had unbelief taken over, recapturing me? It appeared that I was now left with nothing, not even faith. Yet things did happen that strongly argued otherwise. Nor did they proceed only from me as though out of self-justification, but from others, as well.

### **Particle - Terrible Troubling**

On the morning of November 16<sup>th</sup>, I awoke terribly troubled over two things:

One, the way I was during all my existence right up to my involvement in the farm and the wicked ways in which I conducted myself - paying poorly, hiring poorly, stingy, demanding, wasting, blind, stupid, foolish, hasty, ignorant, arrogant, and more. Also there was all my past life before that - it was one and the same person.

Two, given the things we heard happening and the stories we read about how Revenue Canada and Health Canada were terrorizing innocent people and farmers, and how they were in bed with despotic multinational corporations bent on controlling the world, I thought: "Shall we lose everything?"

If we were to lose all, it was not because of wrongdoing, but for righteousness' sake that I wanted to lose it. Were we selfish and uncharitable? Were we focusing on this world - food, organic agriculture, and physical welfare - instead of on the Lord? While the Lord was destroying the old, what were we doing? Were we trying to keep and restore it? If so, we would lose; we would be sorely disappointed, indeed, devastated.

I discussed these things with Lois. I realized I could only see myself as I'd been because God had wrought a deliverance in me.

Now what kind of deliverance? It was the wolf and the lamb of my [vision](#) now at peace. It was the carnal man seeing himself for what he has been and still is, but for the grace of God. The grace of God came to reconcile the carnal man with the spiritual man. The wolf wasn't destroyed, nor was it changed to a lamb, but its habits and appetites were changed miraculously so that it agreed with the lamb and now sought the lamb's welfare. The first Adam is not destroyed, is not changed to another being, but is changed in desire, appetite, attitude, and habit.

When that change comes, the first Adam, for the first time, abhors the way he has been. Nor will he forget the way he was, at least for a time on earth while he deals with others, mercifully, because remembering the way he was.

However, it seemed to me the first Adam must eventually forget, if he's to have pure joy and peace. To remember the past is to have torment. Self-aborrence must end sometime. Yes, the memory of that man in the way that he was will eventually fade away. **"I will remember their sins no more."** If the change is eternal, substantive, and miraculous, there need be no reminder forever of the evil that once was.

### Particle - How Forceful Are Right Words

I wondered if there was a confession and apology coming to the Mills, Knorrs, Ogdens, and Knelsens. Had I been the "man of sin" addressing and condemning them? Had they been the prophesied servants of God sent to deliver Marilyn of her tares? Had we sent them away beaten? Did judgment therefore await us? Were they right after all?

Les did [see](#) about Marilyn and Sean. Gene did [speak](#) of a mixture of law and grace with me, which I think I saw. Mark Ogden did [see](#) a problem with Marilyn. Barney did [say](#) I was *"consumed with rejection."* Les and Gene did [say](#) that Harvest Haven was a Babylonish work. Gene did [say](#) I wouldn't be dying. All these things have I seen, struggled with, and I couldn't argue with them.

And...

[Erin Schipper](#) parted with the forbidden partner.

[Mark and Amanda](#) were experiencing problems of all sorts - a chastening?

[Trudy](#) was now working on her own and accountable, instead of being a dependent - I had written to her to begin to apply herself instead of depending on others.

On the other hand...

[Abby Lynn](#)'s foray (Gene's daughter) with her boyfriend fizzled, but her worldly pursuits continued to complicate matters for them all.

[Gene](#) exhibited horrible darkness and tried raising up rebellion against me by Lois, Sean, and Trevor.

[Barney](#) was vicious and putrid in all his ways, unbelieving.

And I had things to say to all of them. I knew that the [vision](#) of my stepping on new territory and encountering entities hard to identify as friend or foe pertained to them and what the Lord had done.

It was done. The Lord did it, and we would soon see many and great things happening.

### Particle - The World Not Our Business

I told everyone at the farm it wasn't for us to get involved in issues of the world and that we weren't to criticize governments and other authorities for the perceived evils they practice on others. Hedges are upheld and removed by the Lord, as with Job, and what may appear to be utterly unjust and despotic may actually be well deserved or needful. We don't know the whole story. We do know that the Kingdom of God reigns over all.

## Particle - Marilyn's Worship of Sean

A journal entry:

Marilyn admires Sean, worships all that he says, thinks, and does, but despises me. She knows us after the flesh, casting her lot with him. She deems to judge me after the appearance, rejecting the sovereignty and Lordship of Christ in me when the outward appears irrational and foolish. She worships Sean's person as though always anointed and wise.

She will rejoice and be gleeful when she sees him dealing with me and prevailing when I am wrong and he is right on some minor point, and even when he is wrong and I am right. If he prevails in the flesh or in the spirit, she rejoices with him as though I am an alien or an enemy.

Never has there been the slightest pleasure or satisfaction in her when I have prevailed even in righteousness. In fact, her judgment is that I could or would never prevail relative to Sean. She views me as a castaway, a has-been, an old garment to be discarded. How prevalent is her disdain for me! My very breath is strange to her. I know what Job was talking about:

"My breath is hated by my wife, and I must beg to the sons of my mother's womb" (Job 19:17 MKJV).

She defends herself, saying, "You don't know what I think or feel." But she will never say what she thinks or feels. "You won't let me express myself," is her reply. Are these not accusations and indictments on one as if he were utterly a son of Belial, a brute beast? She despises me so, denies it, contradicts herself, and retains her righteous indignation and right to judge me. Am I supposed to beg her to tell me what she's thinking or feeling?

Pungent is Marilyn's bitterness toward me - and toward God! How she contradicts herself! If I try to speak, she flares.

Yesterday, yet again, she stirred me up against others, this time Mark. She has often been wrong, yet she impassions me in her bitterness, which runs wild with her. But she masks it (unconsciously, it seems) with an appearance of piety, composure, wisdom, plaintive disposition, "justified" judgments, and criticisms.

She played Sean, asking, "Why do you want to take care of me? I have a husband; I can take care of myself." She was fishing for words of conjugal, romantic affection and interest. How pitiful! How adulterous! How wicked! How treacherous! How bitter! How shameful! She is naked, even as I saw in the vision, and nobody has eyes to see her nakedness.

She is hearing things from her man of sin, who speaks to her. She hears her own heart. Much has she heard that is not from God, yet attributes it to Him. She is a wretched woman. Though she has had faith, wisdom, and understanding, yet now is she bitter, miserable, and naked. Who can understand? Who can reconcile these things?

I again and again think of these words and wonder at them:

**“And I find more bitter than death the woman whose heart is snares and nets, and her hands like bands. Whoever pleases God shall escape from her, but the sinner shall be taken by her” (Ecclesiastes 7:26 MKJV).**

She has had me in her steel grip ever since we married. No wonder her brother Les was so bitter and, once freed, disappeared for good. No wonder! I have Jezebel on my hands. Jezebel was beautiful. She tried to seduce Jehu with her beauty and charm. Marilyn’s beauty lies not in outward appearance, but in her schmoozy, flattering, meek, and gentle manner, along with her giggles, silly talk, and powers of appeal.

If all else fails, she breaks out in tears when she doesn’t get her way. Then we all fall for her and surrender. In her understanding and personable ways, she is powerful. Her power and control are perfectly hideous.

The Lord is delivering me from her, else I would not be seeing what I see. I perceive that the Lord is now granting me to escape from her.

How can such a bitter woman have faith and wisdom? But she does. And see 1 Corinthians 13:1-3. Many in the world have organizational skills and are able to size up people and situations. The problem is, Marilyn rules with these things rather than surrendering them to God; her gifts are unsanctified. Many in the world have active minds, accurate memories, and insights and greatly prosper, but to what end and to whose glory?

I have been profited by her gifts, but I’ve also been snared and banded, and it has been more bitter than death, even as the wise man said.

Sean is taken by her. I say, “Sean, take her. It’s your turn. I was a sinner taken by her. She’s yours! I’m free.” Yet there’s great sadness in this. A tragedy prolonged and/or repeated is not occasion for rejoicing at all. When I express these things, she goes into a pity party and horrible tantrums, raging, or she hardens herself and ignores me to prove me wrong. There are marks on the wall and broken laundry baskets to prove it. What a bitter, selfish woman!

Les, Penny, Gene, Mark, and Barny all saw these things. I also saw them before they came along, but was more occupied with what I saw of myself, and I also blamed myself for what Marilyn was like. But it isn’t so now. I see her, and God must do what He must do. I no longer take responsibility for her sin, except in that I must pay the price and let her do to me what she will, particularly concerning Sean.

She says I say these sorts of things because I’m hurting. Yes, I *am* hurting but that’s not why I’m saying them. I say them because I see them, apart from the influence of pain and rejection. But she uses this explanation or rationalization to escape culpability. If I speak out of pain rather than truth, then she doesn’t see herself as guilty.

She refuses to be wrong; she can’t bear it. She justifies herself before God, even as Job did. It is despicable and it angers me, yet I pity her. (See 1 Timothy 5:14-15; 2:11-15; 1 Corinthians 14:34-38; Titus 2:3-5.)

On the morning of November 26<sup>th</sup>, I called her to ask of things Sean had to say to her to help her. She said that I was less and less help to her and he was more and more. (Archie once prophesied in 1996 that I would decrease and Sean would increase.)



### Particle - Jonathan Asks About the Sabbath

On November 21, 1999, as Jonathan and I sat reading Exodus 20, he asked me why we didn't keep the Sabbath. I didn't feel at peace about any answer I gave him. Why? I found myself getting into a sort of confusing defense against keeping the seventh day, the Fourth Commandment. I also had to reason with him about keeping another day, Sunday. I was confounded by man's theology, and it wasn't making sense while trying to answer a child's simple question.

### Particle - Haste Is Never Necessary

One of the things I have learned is that there's never need for rushing; rushing always accomplishes the opposite of what is intended. Haste indeed makes waste and **"he that hastes with his feet sins."** Haste is bred of unbelief. God is never in a hurry. So many things continue in desperate condition and it seems God does nothing about it... until the time. There's never a need to hurry, unless He says so, and He rarely if ever does.

### Particle - A Fire Played With

Marilyn and Sean are playing with fire, and already they're burning. The fire grows and spreads, and is capable of burning everyone, given time, nobody exempt. That's how it works; the heat is felt by all who are nearby to varying degrees according to their proximity.

It's not easy to stand outside, watching a home burn with family inside, being told to let it happen. I take it by faith that this fire is a purifying one, which will bring only good in the end for all.

### Particle - Where Did It All Start?

Where did all this trouble start? I'm not sure. Somewhere, I began to abdicate my responsibility as head of the wife. I, in the name of consensus, witness, and godly agreement, reduced myself to seeking answers from the Lord via Marilyn. I made her my head and all the burden fell on her. Satan was then able to come in and deceive her, as he deceived Eve.

I believe this began at Camp Caroline in 1976 when Ernie Chadwick questioned us on a plan I had. He asked if Marilyn was in agreement. Then, after suffering the Westlock chastening in 1981-82, knowing that Marilyn had not been in agreement with me to go there, I decided I wouldn't dare make another move unless she agreed. There it was; she took the lead from there.

I wasn't receiving confirmation that way, I was seeking signs, the difference being that confirmations come after obedience and signs are sought before. I did her great injustice and now pay the price.

### Particle - Standing on the Law of God

It should be simple enough to see the plain directions of the Bible concerning Sean and Marilyn's conduct. They were defying God's Laws. It is common in evangelical circles to forsake the Law of God as "Old Testament," or "for Jews only," something Jesus was supposed to have done away



with. But reason would dictate that He wouldn't want us to feel free to murder or steal or worship other gods or commit adultery, simply because He died on the cross and paid for our sins. Had He not called on us to repent? Had He not said that not one jot or tittle of the Law would be done away? Had He not said, "Be perfect, even as your Father in Heaven is perfect"? Did He not say, "Sin no more, lest something worse befall you"? Surely.

So how could Marilyn and Sean blatantly disregard the Word of God that plainly spoke against adultery, calling for wives to submit to husbands and for all to submit to His authorities, be they elders, teachers, pastors, or whatever? I spent a day directing them all to the Word of God and its validity. It seemed to go nowhere. The reaction seemed to be, "Well, yes, we know what you're saying and what the Bible is saying, but God is doing something here and we have to go with that." What could I do? I wasn't preaching to the converted, that's for sure. If I couldn't receive agreement from them on the authority of Scripture, what was I to do?

### Particle - Lois' Prophecy: A Fresh Breeze

On the morning of November 29<sup>th</sup>, Lois heard the words: *"There is a fresh breeze blowing over the land today. Put away your doubts, put away your fears, and praise Me, praise Me, praise Me."*

### Particle - Reesor and the Benson Estate

Howard appointed lawyer [Carol Reesor](#) as executrix of his estate. She was inexperienced in dealing with financial matters such as the disposing of an estate the nature of Howard's, and it was costing the heirs tens of thousands of dollars. It was a grinding thing to witness. Why did she not hand it over to Mark and Trevor to do as they saw fit, seeing they were the heirs anyway? She could have saved herself much trouble and them much cost. Could it be she wanted to milk the estate for all she could get? Did she not know what she was doing? There could also be another reason:

I could feel her contempt toward us and perhaps toward me in particular. Carol knew Howard didn't wish to see any of his money go to Lois or to his sons if they were associated with me. She deemed us to be Howard's enemies and blamed me for "taking" his sons. Nobody dreamed that his youngest son, Jason, to whom he would have left the entire estate, would disqualify himself as heir by patricide.

Carol was no doubt regretful she had suggested to Howard that he reinstate Trevor and Mark as heirs after Howard [met up](#) with Trevor when Trevor was no longer with us. Howard had excluded Trevor and Mark because of their association with me.

It was evident Carol didn't wish to make it easy for us. In my estimation, her approach of dispersal of the estate was highly costly and wasteful and there was nothing we could do about it. She held the reins as executrix to what was legally Mark's and Trevor's. The situation was aggravating, so we decided to hire another lawyer to fight her. Howard Heil of Lethbridge took on the case, and while it would cost us several more thousands of dollars, we hoped the expensive legal tourniquet would stop the bloodletting before all life was drained from the estate.

All the time, I was wondering, "Do believers get involved in these things? Are we not hypocrites for fighting the heathen for mammon?" But just as I was moved to fight [Ray Spencer](#) and Sunwest Cabinets in 1984, we knew we needed to do this. We couldn't peacefully let it go by.

### Particle - Risky Reasoning with Reesor

I realized I perhaps should have talked to Carol Reesor about her enmity with me. I could have done it when we met with her at the cabin at Ferintosh. I should have called on her to explain her enmity when she wrote us a rude, combative letter. Instead, we assumed there was nothing to be done, not considering she hadn't even heard our side of the story, only Howard's.

Why didn't I? I was fearful of confrontation, hesitant to bring things into the open, not because ashamed of where we stood or what we did (or was I?), but rather because experience generally taught us there was no use in talking to unbelievers. They invariably remained intransigent in their perspective and attitude. If anything, when we expressed our side, it only got worse, understandably so seeing the world is naturally at enmity with God. To Carol, we were a religious cult, as labeled by Howard, not worth the time or attention to be given any regard whatsoever; at least that's the way she treated us. Still, I concluded that something should be said to her.

### **Particle - A New Day Approaching**

On December 3, 1999, I told Marilyn I felt that we were on the verge of a new day, a significant and great change, from learning and preparation and focus on ourselves and our troubles to that of reaching out to others in their troubles.

Heretofore, the Lord was exposing our corruption to us, and we were in pain due to the purging. The wrongs we saw in others were shown to be in us (Romans 2:1). It wasn't enough that we should discern between good and evil. We needed to be corrected, purged, disciplined, chastened, and prepared as vessels meet for the Master's use.

And what was His will in all of this? It was that by us He would reach out to the rest of creation for redemption. I believed that work was here at the door.

### **Particle - Bill Roycroft and Lethbridge Christian Tabernacle**

I had heard many pleasant things of Bill Roycroft, pastor of Lethbridge Christian Tabernacle. One party speaking glowingly of him was Marcia Hagedorn, new owners of land near us at Moon River. I decided to pay Mr. Roycroft's congregation a visit at an evening service, taking Sean with me.

What I saw there was all the spoken and visual trappings of the religious harlot system - all mush, superstition, pagan custom, pleasure, error, and more mush. Christmas decorations were throughout the auditorium; works were promoted, and Bill's message was one of entertainment (Marcia's husband, Dave, did say Bill was an entertainer), lots of fluff and no meat.

I had written some papers I thought were harsh, namely [That Devilish Spirit of Christmas](#) and [The Case for Coming Out](#). Lois, Marilyn, Sean and others disagreed they were harsh. As we stood in the service at the Tabernacle, it was as though the Lord was saying to me, *"Which do you want... your way or theirs?"*

Seeing the harlot's way, I saw that the gentleness and softness of man was what destroyed men. It was as if I was watching a grossly obese person laying on a bed, being spoon-fed junk food, as much of it that the obese one wanted, without having to lift a finger. I looked around and saw the people there babied and pampered to death.

While I acknowledge that there are both extremes, one of tyranny, the other of pampering, I think that in this meeting I was given to see that while what I had might seem like tyranny, it was highly

preferable to the fruits I was witnessing there under Roycroft's "compassionate" ministry. I decided that I had to be what I was and that it was God's will.

I felt angry about what Roycroft was doing to people, but remembered the words of the Lord: **"Let them alone. They are blind leaders of the blind. And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch" (Matthew 15:14 MKJV).**

### Particle - Raising Jonathan

Marilyn and I had not a few discussions on how Jonathan ought to be raised. There were complaints from those at the farm that he was selfish, disobedient, and argumentative and that he was not duly disciplined. Being the only child, he wasn't called upon to share with others; Marilyn cooked him anything he wanted and treated him like she was his buddy, giving him almost anything he wanted (which, by the way, even buddies don't do or ask of each other).

And what do children do? Not knowing better, they often choose treats and pampering rather than discipline. While I wanted to see more restrictions with Jonathan, Marilyn would deride me for it and often scoff and argue with me. My problem was that I knew I was cheap and rather crude in perceptions on certain social and child-rearing matters, having plainly inherited some of them from my father and family. I was also prone to having my emotions rule me in dealing with Jonathan, which is never good, so I hesitated to press my convictions.

Marilyn was plainly winning Jonathan's affections. In some respects, she had earned them fair and square, as a mother tending to his every need, starting with breastfeeding and changing diapers, to homeschooling, to attending to his every request for attention. But I thought she wasn't seeing things right.

Often, I rebuked Jonathan for talking back to his mother or arguing with her, while at the same time, I wondered if she wasn't reaping what she was sowing by rebelling against, and arguing with, me.

### Particle - Giving to the Poor

We receive many calls for donations from many diverse groups. When, how much, and to whom to give are questions I must frequently answer for myself. "What kind of Christian are you, not giving to the sick, the less fortunate, and those promoting good causes?" Do we wait for specific direction from the Lord or would He love for us to give freely without being told or asked to do so?

The Bible reveals that God sends judgments on people and nations in the form of famine, sword, pestilence, and wild beast. If He sends judgment, who are we to work contrary to His will? Are there not Scriptural precedents as to whom we as believers ought to give? Yes, there are, and the Lord brought them up:

**"But I tell you truly, many widows were in Israel in the days of Elijah, when the heaven was shut up three years and six months, when great famine was throughout all the land. But Elijah was not sent to any of them, except to Zarephath, a city of Sidon, to a woman, a widow. And many lepers were in Israel in the time of Elisha the prophet, and none of them was cleansed except Naaman the Syrian" (Luke 4:25-27 MKJV).**

At the Bethesda pool, Jesus healed but one man, though there were many (John 5). When I try to live by logic or law, I squander, flounder, and am not at peace, whether I give or withhold. If I live by the Spirit and wisdom of God, I know what I need to do.

### **Particle - Resolution for Marilyn's Happiness**

In this past week or two, I've felt like I don't want to stand in the way of Marilyn's happiness, or Sean's for that matter. If they love each other and would be fulfilled in each other, I don't want to oppose it. Whether it's right or not, whether God wants it or not, I don't discuss here now. I only say that I am settled with letting those two marry if they choose, even if I'm alive and present.

I marvel at the place I've come to. There's no way I could have said this or felt this way a short while ago. I told Marilyn this today. She wanted me to tell the others at the farm, so I did. There was no comment.

Years ago, Marilyn told me she and Sean would have a conjugal love she and I never had. Today I see that we never had it. I had always felt coerced into marriage, never loved her, and subconsciously resented her. Even on the first day of receiving the Spirit, I was annoyed with her. After being healed of grouchy mornings, I recall still complaining to men in Canmore in 1976 that I was always angry and arguing with Marilyn (I was seeking counsel of them in this matter and they had none for me). To this day, she can't please me. Why?

I think the answer is we were never meant for each other; our marriage has been hell. Though Marilyn said she heard from God that I would be her husband, I think she was hearing what she wanted to hear, and there's a difference between "would" and "should." I heard nothing. I allowed Archie's proposal to push me into a marriage not of my true desire. We have both paid a fearful price for it.

Marilyn said that within the first month of our marriage, she was disillusioned and disappointed. Why not? We have always been at odds. It was never a marriage "made in Heaven" as people are reputed to know it. If these things are true, aren't we in fornication? Therefore, don't we have a legitimate basis under God for divorce?

No wonder she's bitter! No wonder that, in my solitude, I have discovered peace and freedom I didn't realize I had lost in marriage to her. Henry Blackaby, being our pastor, might have realized we weren't meant to be married if we had sought his counseling. He might have sensed or plainly known that I didn't have what was needed for a healthy marital relationship with Marilyn.

Ironically, we just received a card from my mother and a cash gift in honor of "25 years of love and partnership." There has been no love and certainly no partnership. As Marilyn said, "We have never worked together." Sean once had a vision of a person all beat up, representing us. We have lived a life (or death) of beating each other, of bitterness, resentment, and hatred.

What now? What about Jonathan? I guess I have to let him go. Where do I go? What do I do? Do we divorce? Is this strong delusion?

### **Particle - Another Visit from Mills**

[Les Mills](#) came around for a six-hour visit. He told me the Ogdens had turned against him and Gene Knorr had never run into anyone like me before and didn't know what to do, so he washed his hands of me altogether. Les admitted he had been deaf as an adder, unwisely running around and seeing people, and said he was starting to see and hear some of what I have been saying to them.

### Particle - Reflections on Mills' Visit

I can't seem to think on my feet - never could. It takes time for me to realize the truth of things. The day after Les' visit, I contemplated the conversation. He said he had never been at enmity with me, but here are some points to contradict him:

- 1) He accused me of cursing him in saying, "Stay away from Barny," when it was a warning.
- 2) He suggested I was schizophrenic or had mental problems.
- 3) He accused me of holding out on pay due to Gene for work at the farm.
- 4) He accused me of enmity toward [Gord Fuller](#).
- 5) He confided my words to his nephew as though he were a Christian brother, which he wasn't.
- 6) He rejected my words of likening him to Onan, spilling his seed everywhere.
- 7) He rejected my illustration of the horse-breaking.
- 8) He negatively questioned, even criticized, the separation between my brother [Archie](#) and us, without the facts.
- 9) He opened the [last letter](#) without permission, contrary to my request that he not open it until arriving to talk.
- 10) He continued to run around, unbroken, unsubmitive, as though I didn't stand in the Lord as an emissary to him.
- 11) He sided and sympathized with Gene, who bitterly retaliated against me repeatedly.
- 12) He gave credibility to Barny's evil reports of me. Barny asked around town and received slanderous rumors from my enemies.
- 13) He accused my words of being unjustified products of pain from my situation.
- 14) He believed [Penny's dream](#) that I had no authority in the Lord with them.
- 15) He refused to believe my refutation of the lies told about me.

Enmity comes as direct, obvious confrontation or secret deliberate opposition. Enmity also comes in the form of passivity. **"He that gathers not with Me scatters abroad,"** said Jesus. Is there someone there who won't help or stand with you or care in a matter of any consequence? That is enmity.

Enmity comes as unbelief; it essentially calls truth a lie and the truth-speaker a liar. Why were the children of Israel overthrown in the wilderness? Because they didn't believe. They murmured against God and His servants, Moses and Aaron, and went whoring after other gods. They didn't believe Almighty God Who did such great things for them in their sight. They called Him a liar.

### Particle - Great Turmoil at Farm

On December 17<sup>th</sup>, Lois called and said she received that God had put that love in Sean and Marilyn for each other and there was no changing it. She was crying, fearful, and depressed. They were all anxious, depressed, and defeated. There was constant strife and dissension.

Trevor said he was on the verge of packing it in, and Marilyn said she received that Lois and Trevor wouldn't be at the farm much longer. If this love between Marilyn and Sean was of God, why all the troubling? Ought there not to be rejoicing at love God has created?

Meanwhile, I was experiencing submission to God's will and a degree of victory, revelation, and understanding of things, though I was powerless to do anything for them.

### **Particle - Sean Prevails**

On the 20<sup>th</sup>, Marilyn was very upset with Sean because he promised to call and talk to me on the weekend and didn't (I don't know what about). However, several have been the times when he was right upset with others for not fulfilling their promises or duties, particularly to him. I heard he was very intolerant of others' faults, not considering his own. Sean complained about being left in the dark about things, yet he left me in the dark about so very much more. Lois coined words to describe his attitude: "You do as I tell you, and I'll do as I please."

I called Sean, stirred up by Marilyn in anger with him. He didn't remember making that promise to Marilyn. I called him a hypocrite. He calmly explained the whole situation and compelled me to apologize by his report.

I perceived that while I was out to get things right (law), Sean was out to get the people right (love). I'd gotten after them for this world's good, but he for their souls' good. He loved, but I had never loved.

In the last few days, Lois and Trevor submitted to Sean. They had resisted him for my sake, focusing on me. Sean expected me to be taken physically, especially in light of the happenings in the previous few days. All was transferred to him - possessions, honor, respect, authority, submission, and my family.

### **Particle - Will the Real Culprit Please Stand Up?**

How I bounce back and forth from one frame of mind to another, from one place to the opposite in thinking and perception! Sean received words in the night, having asked the Lord what was going on with me. He received that my life here on earth was a preparatory one for the next world.

I see Sean as the culprit. He knows no boundaries, ever ready to usurp. I see Marilyn as the culprit, fretting selfishly and stirring up anger in me. I see myself as the culprit, the anti-Christ, serving myself, mammon, and law. I'm in darkness and don't know what to believe about anything.

A great battle ensued with Marilyn, which grew out of a conversation I had with Sean last night, wherein he admitted no guilt or shame over all that was happening. He also confessed to having seminal issues as a result of fantasizing sexually about Marilyn. He said he felt no guilt about such fantasies of her he had a few years ago and he feels no guilt now.

Sean and Marilyn each justify themselves in these things and don't believe the Scriptures. If they're right, then Marilyn and I are wrong living together and should part. It is strong delusion or I am dead in God's sight already.

Sean sees himself taking all. If the Lord is behind it, all power to him; if not, the Lord will deal with him. Till then, I'm powerless and must let it happen. Marilyn wants it. It seems that what is happening to us right now is worded here:



**“Then they will deliver you up to be afflicted and will kill you. And you will be hated of all nations for My Name’s sake. And then many will be offended, and will betray one another, and will hate one another. And many false prophets will rise and deceive many. And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many will become cold” (Matthew 24:9-12 MKJV).**

There is betrayal, hatred, and love grown cold because of lawlessness. There is a falling away, as Paul wrote in 2 Thessalonians 2.

### Particle - Times To Determine an End

The number forty signifies the end of flesh. Day 1200 of Marilyn’s prophecy would be 40 months, if we use Hebrew months of 30 days each. This would fall on January 7, 2000. If we take months as they come, the day will be January 24<sup>th</sup>. If we go not 40 months, but 3 ½ years, we go to either Day 1260 (March 7 by Hebrew measurement) or Day 1277 (March 24 by months of the Gentile calendar).

We have surmised, guessed, speculated, and opined on dates, and indeed there have been things happening, but when will it all really conclude, eliminating guesswork and doubt? When will all needful things be revealed to settle everything for us? How much longer will this guessing and speculation go on? How silly it is! Weren’t we warned to not go there?

### Particle - Harry and Alice Koppert

A new family in Moon River came by, going door-to-door, introducing themselves, wishing us a “Merry Christmas,” and leaving Scripture verses printed to be hung on the wall. We had met the Kopperts in 1996 at the farm when they came picking strawberries. I had a one-hour talk with them and got nowhere, apparently. Harry was very narrow-minded and self-righteous.

He refused my offer of a paper on Christmas, saying I was arrogant in other writings I had given him when we first met. I presume he thought I was arrogant because I wrote forthrightly, without apology. What I was saying was not merely opinion and was not up for discussion or debate.

What would befall Harry Koppert? It would be tragic and sad.

### Particle - Arrogance

What is arrogance? Is it arrogant to be sure of something? If I know something for certain and declare it, am I therefore arrogant? Am I to be disingenuous, pretending not to know, feigning humility and objectivity? Just because I know something and tell it as I know it, does it necessarily mean I think I’m better than someone else? Does a parent always have to appear to give an opinion to a child or a teacher to a student instead of stating things as they are? Must we act as though nothing can be known for sure or assume that nothing *can* be known for sure?

Can’t speaking with legitimate authority be mistaken for arrogance? I have no doubt Jesus’ enemies perceived Him as arrogant when He said, **“I am the Bread from Heaven,” “I am the Light of the world,” “I am the Way, the Truth and the Life; no man can come to the Father but by Me,” “I am the Good Shepherd,” “I am the Door,” “Destroy this Temple and in three days, I will raise it up,” “I will give you living water,” “I have overcome the world”** and, **“Before Abraham was, I Am.”**



He even said, **“Yet you have not known Him, but I know Him. And if I should say I do not know Him, I would be a liar like you. But I know Him and I keep His Word” (John 8:55 MKJV).**

Harry didn't like being spoken to as though he didn't know. He didn't like hearing someone speak the truth as unalterable. He presumed to be the enlightened one. “How dare you talk to me that way?” the arrogant one protests. Is not arrogance a presumption of superiority without justification?

I wrote a letter to the Kopperts in response to the things we discussed and which I perceived, but didn't send it. Should I have? I debated and asked those at the farm; they didn't know whether I should send it, though they didn't question my motives. I decided to leave the Kopperts to themselves and a peace came to me, perhaps because it promised no further conflict with them - something I didn't enjoy. More likely this peace came because I determined to hear from the Lord for myself; I was refraining from seeking the will of God from men (those at the farm).

Every time I held back from speaking, I sank into confusion. “Should I or shouldn't I?” was a common question I often struggled with. Would I ever send the letter? The time would come when I wondered if I did the right thing by withholding.

### **Particle - I Answer My Mother's 25<sup>th</sup> Anniversary Gift**

Over the years, my mother would send a birthday or anniversary gift. I never quite knew what to do with her gestures of goodwill because I never really believed or trusted her. This time, I was moved to write a letter, openly confessing our present circumstances after 25 years of marriage.

TO: Anne Hafichuk

FROM: Victor Hafichuk

December 23, 1999

Marilyn and I discussed how we should respond to your gift and decided to accept it. I cashed it today. Tonight I began to think on it in relation to why you sent it, that is, on the occasion of our 25th wedding anniversary. I began to realize that it would not be an honest thing to accept this gift because, in fact, our marriage never made it to that milestone.

Only God knows when the breakdown began, but I suspect near the very beginning. There was always conflict. As a volcano quietly seething beneath the surface, yet smoking for all who had eyes to see, the separation began to become active in 1995 when a young man came on the scene with whom Marilyn fell in love shortly after. By 1996, it was obvious to all those around.

By 1997, before our 23<sup>rd</sup> anniversary, I gave Marilyn an ultimatum: Decide who is your husband. Unknown to me, in the next day or so, she made a public declaration to our friends that she chose the other man. I didn't know of this until months later through one of those friends who decided to tell me when he realized I knew nothing of Marilyn's announcement.

This volcano has spewed ashes and lava ever since. We've had literally hundreds of fights, one of those was physical and many close to it. Sadly, our son has been witness to most of it all and has not been the better for it, to put it mildly.

I tell you all this not because it's any of your business or anyone else's in your company, but because I would not want you to have the pleasure of thinking I'm trying to hide anything, as

though afraid of what you might think - I'm not. I also feel that if we were to refuse your gift, perhaps it would be fair to give the reason.

I accept responsibility for the breakdown, how much of it is mine is hard to tell; perhaps all of it. To make the understatement of the millennium, I haven't been the sweetest guy in existence. Marilyn has often said that no other woman could ever put up with me. I agree.

She still dwells with me three days of the week in a manner of speaking. It is somewhat of a schizophrenic arrangement: she suffers the peculiarity and uncomfortability of dividing herself in two directions and our social presentation has a surface appearance contrary to the facts.

She has said she would never leave me until I died, something she prophesied in 1996 would happen to me. I truly believed the prophecy and fully expected to be long gone by now (we all expected it and some even hoped), but I'm still here though often wishing I was gone. Perhaps that would be too easy for one deserving of pain, sorrow, and humiliation. However, for all I know, it could happen any day.

But I see cracks in the foundation of her conviction that we should remain together until "death do us part." Losing hope that I may not be gone soon enough, her resolve weakens and, truly, I've been encouraging her to leave me seeing as how she loves another and not me. She now considers it. The hour draws near. Because our son has a special relationship with Marilyn, I will lose him, too. It's inevitable.

Perhaps you could all get together over this news, if in fact you haven't already heard, and celebrate. Celebrate at the downfall of this "man of God" who so tormented you in all his delusion, preaching up a storm but suffering the fruits of a devil. Enjoy this occasion. Laugh and kick up your heels. It's party time! "Hypocrite! He's got his up 'n comings at long last! Took awhile but it was well worth waiting for."

Indeed, God is not mocked. I know firsthand. Whatsoever a man sows, that shall he surely reap.

"He that is greedy of gain troubles his house," and, "He that troubles his house inherits the wind." Solomon spoke these words out of the wisdom of God. So it is.

### **Particle - Total Confusion**

I had a terrible night. Though anxious feelings were gone, I was in darkness, not knowing good from evil, right from wrong, my righteousness from the Lord's, law from grace, left from right, light from darkness, or true from false. I experienced enormous guilt from the past dealings with people, particularly Archie's family. When I sank into doubt, I began to question everything, past, present, and future, near and far, physical and spiritual.

Les called, and I confided to him that I have had many battles and just had a terrible one within. I even debated sharing the Koppert letter with him and telling him I didn't send it and why, though I don't know that I knew the real reason.

### **Particle - Spiritual Authority**

Les, Gene, and Mark Ogden all denounced the validity of men having spiritual authority over others. They caused me to doubt what the Lord had taught me about it over the years. They made me suspect myself of being a veritable tyrant.

Sean was pressing to talk to me so he finally came out on December 26<sup>th</sup> and we spent eight hours talking. During the process, I came to realize that much of my darkness and confusion was because I was doubting spiritual authority and not exercising it as I ought.

Les and Gene were reading Preston Eby, David Ebaugh, Elwin Roach, and E. E. Brooks. I had read their writings. These writers also denounced men having spiritual authority with others. That is like saying children have equal authority with parents, wives with husbands, students with teachers, apprentices with masters, prisoners with wardens, and employees with employers. Jesus should have gone and gotten His own donkey and tax money. He should have said to His disciples, "I'll follow you as you follow Me." The apostles should have the authority to appoint their Master, the Messiah. Paul should have said, "I'll be your followers and you be followers of me."

The writers I mention taught against what is orderly, necessary, and right because they, in their pride, long ago rejected legitimate authority in their lives and despised the godly submission required of every saint.

I realized another thing for the first time. I had so depended on Marilyn for counsel and help in decision-making. It was entirely unbelieving and unfair of me to do so. She wasn't meant to handle battles; women aren't meant to be on the front lines, facing the enemy. Look at the mess we're in because Eve took it upon herself to make the decision to eat of the forbidden fruit and because Adam didn't exercise his authority or discretion and refrain from following his wife. Yet, these things had to happen. It was all part of *The Plan*.

## ***Page 7***

### **Particle - The Cost of Doubting the Godly Principle of Spiritual Authority**

Like a veil suddenly drawn back, I realized that I had no reason whatsoever to feel guilty about the way I dealt with others in the past. It now almost angered me that the enemy had me in this state. I thought of Chris Hafichuk and said, "No way! They were all guilty. I tried to help."

In doubting true spiritual authority, I therefore began to doubt my past actions and dealings along that line, hence the darkness. That was done now.

**My new resolve started when I began to thank God for the darkness in which I found myself, something I had never done before.**

### **Particle - Restoration of Divine Authority and All Things**

Fire came by Les, Gene, and others so that what I had should be tried. Maybe my works were burned up, but His work in me remained intact and stronger than ever, praise God!

In the night the Lord also showed me He was going to restore everything, tangible and intangible, every lost opportunity concerning all with whom we have had to do all our lives. All will be redeemed. He said so.

He showed me that women have ruled as a necessity, by His design. I often wondered why it says, “A man shall leave his father and mother and cleave to his wife,” and not, “A woman shall leave her father and mother and cleave to her husband.” The revelation was that a man leaves the nurturing of his parents and takes on the nurturing of a wife, instead. The nurturing continues until he is fully grown.

When Paul said, “**...even so is the man also by the woman” (1 Corinthians 11:12)**, perhaps he doesn’t speak merely of physical birth by a mother, but of nurturing by a wife, at least for some. Then comes a time when he also leaves his wife as he did his parents, walking in a new dimension with the Lord. And where it says, “**Neither was the man created for the woman,**” Paul points out that because a woman nurtures a man does not mean he is hers. She’s there to help him for a time.

To know true spiritual authority is to sit on the throne. The throne is within. To know it is to have the presence of the Lord within, reigning with Him.

When one forsakes and surrenders all that he has and is to the Lord, the Lord gives him all that He has and is. What a trade! This speaks of the reconciliation of all things as well as knowing true spiritual authority. This is that overcoming promised in Revelation 2 and 3. This is what the Lord spoke of when He said that those who forsook all would receive a hundredfold in this life.

This is partially what is meant by that spoken of the 144,000: “**These are those who were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are those who follow the Lamb wherever He goes. These were redeemed from among men, as a firstfruit to God and to the Lamb” (Revelation 14:4 MKJV).**

This does not speak of men who were never married. Consider that the sons of Jacob were all married, as were some of the apostles, including Peter, as were prophets Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, Joseph, and David.

### Particle - A Letter of Confession and Resignation to the Farm

On December 29, 1999, I wrote this letter to those at the farm:

To all concerned at the farm, “the six” (Mills, Knorrs, Ogdens), and all.

Marilyn and Sean believe. They love the Lord, they love those who are the Lord’s, and they love their neighbor(s). I don’t and I never have.

I have always loved *things*. My focus has ever been on money, on gain, on getting. My emphasis on law has been for my own sake - to get and to condemn so I could get, whether it be one’s goods or one’s soul (subservience). I have sought to rule and served only myself. There has never been a stitch of love in me, hence Marilyn’s bitterness.

While I have spoken doctrine and carnal knowledge, Marilyn has gone by faith, without reading much of anything, even the Scriptures, and spoken truth by faith. She has disciplined Sean these past years and nurtured him to be strong in faith.

Concerning “the six,” Marilyn heard, “*This is why he [I, Victor] must go.*” I believe it is that I need to be taken out of the way so that Les and the others can come to Marilyn and Sean for ministry. While they have viewed them as the culprits, truly I am the culprit, that man of

sin, that son of perdition, that wicked one now exposed. I have condemned and railed upon them (read the last letter to Les and Gene in particular and catch the spirit of it).

I don't love - not them, not anybody, not even my own flesh, not Marilyn, not Jonathan. That's why money matters bother me; that's why I can't handle anybody or anything; that's why all the conflict we have all had. I have cursed everyone, some often, and I've set everyone in turmoil and sorrow by my ways. I love mammon.

Bensons, I think you need to flee to Sean and away from me, for your lives. It seems that the Lord is doing this for your sakes now. Sean cares; I never did. While he and Marilyn have spiritual wisdom, I've only had carnal wisdom which can appear to be true and valuable but, in effect, brings death.

This last watering incident is a good example. Why have I so worried and fretted and scolded and argued? Because of unbelief. I haven't believed. For unbelief, the Israelites were overthrown in the wilderness.

When Sean feels he should speak to Les and Gene saying I haven't gotten anywhere, it's true. Nor should I be there when you do, Sean. Nor will this ever change. I see nothing but that I am finished and you people ought to be free of my tyranny (Isaiah 14; Ezekiel 28).

I've been clinging desperately to everything - possessions, wife, son, all you people, the estate.... I have held back saying these things lest you boys, Trevor and Mark, should give it all to Sean, turning away from me. But why shouldn't you? Why should I shamefully, pitifully, helplessly try to retain or obtain anything any further? The Lord will, does, and has delivered you out of my power.

I have been a disgusting creature to all - you, "the six," flesh and blood families, all associations, neighbors.... (I don't think this is a pity party and I hope you don't take it that way.)

Covetousness! That's why the fear, strife, worry, and anxiety. But why should I fear? Haven't I learned that this world and what it offers is worthless, while the world to come and what God offers is priceless? Of course!

The Lord bless and keep you, people.

Victor

## **Particle - The End of 1999**

On January 1, 2000, I wrote in my journal:

"There have been no Y2K problems. President Yeltsin of Russia resigned today by surprise. I sent a letter to all those at the farm and, with the year 1999, too, I'm finished. I quit. I'm dead. The Lord can do what He wants with my carcass. I tried, and I failed. I hoped, I worked, I, I, I."

## **Particle - My New Year's Resolution**

Today, I quit. I give up. I've lost anything I ever had in my life. Sooner or later, I'll lose whatever I have now. And I never had what I thought I had or ever hoped to have. I tried to

believe, obey, love, give, act wisely, do right, and walk with God, and I have utterly failed, while I witness Marilyn and Sean and Jonathan succeed. I'm done. I quit.

Shall I go back to the world? Not by deliberate choice, though I can't see how it much matters. No, I think I'll just rot... or freeze to death.

I suspect that simply quitting is one step in the direction of going back to the world. I'm reminded of the verse where the Lord says He'll have no pleasure in the soul that draws back. That is a threat I can expect to be fulfilled, given my track record, while any Scriptural promises I've desired to be fulfilled remain out of reach. I've been an outcast and a reject from conception to this hour. I quit deceiving myself with illusions and false hopes. I quit.

### **Particle - The Truth of My Letter to the Farm**

I realized that the December 29<sup>th</sup> letter I sent to the farm was a reaction in the flesh of discouragement and self-condemnation growing out of Marilyn's constantly flowing praises of Sean, who, in her eyes, could do no wrong. And often she contrasted me to him. I thought that what she said was true and that what I wrote in the letter to them was therefore true.

### **Particle - 2000 and 5760**

I find it interesting that the Gentile calendar year 2000 coincides with the Hebrew calendar year of 5760 (144 X 40). The number 144 (12 X 12) represents the number of generations, each being 40 years. Completeness is suggested or signified, from the time of Adam to this day.

### **Particle - Seven Fat and Seven Lean Years**

Jacob's son, Joseph, had seven years of abundance to gather and store food in Egypt before seven lean years of drought would come and devour all that was stored, and then some. I found myself comparing those times to our situation, only in reverse. I saw that we might have a time of preparation, yes, but seven years of "leanness" first, being chastened, disciplined, sifted, and tried.

Thus far, for over four years, we had leanness - bloodletting, expense, labor, learning, losing, failing, crying, struggling, purging, burning, and cleansing. Then, for those of us surviving the trials, there would begin a time when God would use us as instruments to minister in whatever way to a hurting world. If the specific time span of seven years applied, we would begin to taste a fulfillment and usefulness in the fall of 2002, seeing we bought the farm in 1995. That's if the farm in itself has anything to do with the timetable.

Would I be around for the payoff? Not if Marilyn was right, yet here we were over three years after her [prophecy](#), and I was still here. And the Lord did tell me I wouldn't be physically dying, while she was adamant that I would.

### **Particle - A Revelation on False Prophecy**

Is the following an excellent example of twisted reasoning, or is there a precedent (of sorts) in Scripture for it?

A prophecy of which I have often wondered ever since I gave it was one I spoke to the [Tower family](#), Branhamites in Portage La Prairie in 1981, saying that Brent wouldn't marry his American girlfriend, and their not marrying would be a sign that their Branhamite religion and doctrine were wrong and that they needed to come out from it. We [found out](#) in 1990 that they did marry and also had children.

One morning it was made known to me that, yes, it was a false prophecy from my lips, and it served to deceive the Towers, not because they believed it but because they didn't. Brent's marrying would convince them I prophesied falsely and persuade them to remain in their religion. The revelation to me was that I prophesied and condemned them to believe falsehood, God purposing that they should be deceived. The Biblical example? Though it is not an exact parallel, read 1 Kings 13 of the young and old prophet, and see how strange the ways of the Lord can be.

### Particle - Confounding the Wise by the Foolish

I've also seen how God has stumbled others by me, not by false prophecy, but by causing me to say or do apparently foolish things, so that people might scoff and He might find occasion against them to bring judgment. I would walk away from those occasions, asking myself, "What got into me? Why did I say/do that?" Later, I would find out. This is not to say that I haven't said and done many foolish things that apparently didn't serve such godly purposes; indeed, I have, as the reader should well know by now.

### Particle - Vision: Sean Dying in My Arms

On January 5<sup>th</sup> or so, I had a vision of Sean. I saw him lying on the ground, face up, bleeding and dying. I was kneeling and crying, holding his head and shoulders off the ground in my hands and on my forelegs. I delivered this vision to the farm on January 7<sup>th</sup>, Day 1200 since the prophecy.

### Particle - The Wolf and the Lamb

Common nominal Christian assumption is that wolves can be changed to sheep. Not true; it was never meant to be. By God's power and not by our works, the wolf will remain a wolf, but be [reconciled](#) with the lamb.

Salvation is not about the wolf changing into another creature. There are two changes to come for wolves: they will cease trying to be something they are not, and they will remain wolves, but God will change them into "good" wolves, as Isaiah testifies:

***"Also the wolf shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the cub lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them" (Isaiah 11:6 MKJV).***

### Particle - Love Conversations

Sean called me to say that he and Marilyn had another "love" conversation on Friday the 7<sup>th</sup> after I left the farm. I confess it made me feel bad - depressed, condemned, forsaken, betrayed - perhaps "forlorn" is the best word. Mark also felt bad about it. Sean was prompted to divulge these things when I called the farm to share some writings by Elwin Roach, "The Rapture" and "Waiting."

### Particle - Bitterness



When you are given to see the incarnation of bitterness concentrated in your direction, I doubt that there can be a more hideous spectacle, especially when that bitterness comes from one you have known intimately for decades - one from whom you naturally expect the opposite toward you - love, acceptance, respect, appreciation, and empathy. Bitterness is made manifest in due time because, ultimately, all things must come to light. Only understanding from God can give one the encouragement to withstand someone's bitterness and forgive.

But bitterness is the lot of every believer and everyone must come to terms with it. This is about **"that wicked one being revealed"** (2 Thessalonians 2), who must be dealt the deathblow. While the judgment of the man of sin within is the very worst time for all believers, there is cause to lift up the head, because redemption is near at hand.

**"And then they shall see the Son of Man coming in a cloud with power and great glory. And when these things begin to happen, then look up and lift up your heads, for your redemption draws near" (Luke 21:27-28 MKJV).**

The manifestation of that mysterious man of bitterness is a token of the Lord present, for the son of perdition is exposed by the brightness of the Lord's coming and destroyed by His Word. But destroyed how? By being redeemed, transformed, resurrected, and reconciled to God through the Son of God. It is a great and terrible event.

Bitterness cries, "You owe me!"

And she will not rest until

She gets what she wants.

She'll not be persuaded otherwise

Nor will a substitute do.

Bitterness is rooted in finding no fault in one's self. "I'm innocent. I deserve better." Bitterness is arrogant and presumptuous. The very inability to acknowledge wrong breeds bitterness. The acknowledgment isn't necessary for one's self only, but also for all mankind. We must recognize the fallen state of the universal carnal man, of which we are all a part.

What is this negative side of seeing and confessing our wrong? Is it not more a matter of confessing that **God alone** is just and righteous and sovereign over all? Bitterness denies His righteousness, justice, wisdom, sovereignty, and indeed, His very nature.

"I disagree with You!" she cries to God.

"Either You don't know what You're doing

Or You can't do what's right.

So I have to do it!

I have to take control of things;

I have to protect myself

And get what I want.

Nobody else can be trusted to do it for me.

But I know I can't,

Yet I have to try

And try and try until

You will finally see it my way.

I am wise in my own eyes."

Bitterness is stubborn;

She shuts her eyes and stops her ears.

She sees what she wants to see;

She tells herself what she wants to hear,

And is deceived in believing

That which is not true.

Her heart worships her ambition and desire.

Nothing can persuade her otherwise.

Ah, but the Lord is merciful and finally prevails! He delivers us out of the pit of corruption and casts all our sins behind His back! Not only had we rebelled, but we didn't know it. We didn't perceive ourselves in rebellion until we were delivered from it.

And the Lord comes

And grants her all her desire

And more than she asks.

He opens her eyes to see

And she closes them, seeing.

Brokenness confesses, "I owe you!"

And cannot rest until

The debt is settled once for all.

He opens her eyes to see,

And she rests, pacified.

Content is her new name.

*January 11 and 15, 2000*

*Moon River Estates*

### **Particle - How Hard Is Too Hard, and Is It Good or Bad?**

I have often thought I've been too hard on people when speaking to them and confronting them on their spiritual error. I'm reminded of how a nation was formed in the "fiery iron furnace." When their wilderness experience began, they were wishing they were back in the iron furnace of Egyptian slavery and oppression. They cried out for deliverance in Egypt and now they were crying to be delivered back to the furnace.

Another thought: God seemed deceptive and treacherous. He led Jacob and his family out of severe drought and into Egypt, where they were cordially received and provided for. And by whom? By Joseph, Jacob's son, second in command of Egypt, who over two decades earlier, was sold into slavery by his brothers. As time passed, things changed and the guests became slaves, all under God's divine hand.

Weren't hardships occurring at our farm? That which we expected to be a pleasant haven became hard bondage. But when all is done, the [prophecy](#) of Harvest Haven will be written in the hearts, and then will we "come out of Egypt" to go to the promised land, taking the spiritual domain out of the hands of the enemy.

### **Particle - Changes in Me**

I perceived some changes in me. My nights were more restful, my dreams slowly altering, and I dwelt less on the earthly and on the past. I had more faith now that the Lord would reconcile all things. I saw more past the veneers or appearances. I more easily discerned by the Spirit the hidden nature of people's thoughts, words, and deeds. I found myself with an increasing honesty or candidness and willingness to be open about matters. Fear was disappearing, and confidence in the Lord was increasing; however, I still saw traces of fear in junk dreams.

Chiropractic treatment had relieved me of tensions and anxiety, as chiropractors claim they do. Should I attribute all my improvement to chiropractic or had there been supernatural changes in me? Whatever the vehicle of God's grace, I was thankful.

### **Particle - Who Slew Me?**

If I had been slain, who slew me? Was it not my own wife? Yes, even as the Lord's people slew Him. And out of bitterness they killed Him. They weren't impressed with their Husband. They had served in bondage many times under many nations and, even at His coming, they served under the Roman yoke, hoping He would come and glorify them.

But while He cast off the majority of His nation, He kept a remnant, those who would honor Him in spirit and in truth, not looking for their own benefit or glory but honoring Him for Who He is.

They killed Him, but He laid down His life for them. Why did they kill Him? Because they served other gods. They wanted the power and independence. They thought they knew the Voice of God in that they had Moses' Law and the Scriptures. But the Voice of God, the Word, stood before them. He was their King, their Authority, their Husband, their Portion, but they said, "No, we love another." These were parallels to the relationship between Marilyn and me.

### **Particle - Victor's Prophecy: Of Marilyn**

On the evening of January 17, 2000, I received this prophecy for Marilyn:

*"All will be reconciled, replaced, restituted. The causes of bitterness will be addressed, removed, revisited in the sense that she will be brought to the place where all will have been made right – no more bad memories, no more regrets, and no cause for such.*

*But neither will there be a cause (outside of the Lord's grace and will) for contentment. She will not be brought to a state of contentment because of any external reason, such as a husband that is loving and ideal, but God will simply make her to be wholly content. That contentedness will emanate from her like light from a bulb to all things at hand or nearby. She will enjoy her contentment immensely. There will be such peace, satisfaction, and fulfillment. There will be no regret of the past, no agitation or discomfort of the present, and no anxiety for the future. In all three, she and all will be well. Full assurance of this will be hers. Bitterness could never again return."*

Remember my [vision](#) of Marilyn on the throne in the sky?

The next day, on the heels of this prophecy, Marilyn was considering going to be with Sean. I reiterated that I wouldn't stand in the way, not at all. Tomorrow, she will tell me she had more intimate conversation with Sean. I know these things before I'm told, before I even see her now.

### **Particle - Jonathan's Interests and Abilities**

Jonathan, now eight, makes remarkable creations with his Legos, which has been quite a toy for him - challenging, flexible, educational, confidence-building, interesting, developmental, and more. He has spent many hours at it. Trevor bought him his first set.

I once tried organizing all the pieces in compartments to facilitate finding what was needed, only to find the fun taken out of it for him. Now we rummage and enjoy. I say "we" because, on occasion, I join him and enjoy it. When he was three, he was disconcerted with the fact that I produced more creative pieces than he. "Dad, how do you do that? Why can't I do it?" he would lament. It wasn't long before he quite outstripped me in capability and imagination, I'd say by age six.

He's learning to ice skate and catching on quickly. All three of us are going to Harper's Chiropractic in Coaldale for adjustments three times a week. Jonathan is so very active. He

can't ever walk or sit. He must jump and run. If any child set forth an example of a "twirling dervish," I'm afraid it is he.

Jonathan is immensely interested in martial arts, inspired by various TV programs, whether for bad or good, I'm not sure. With my mind, I suspect for the worse, yet feel it's not a problem somehow.

Jonathan is very confident with others, no matter the age, and comfortable with those who are years his senior. In his homeschooling, he is receiving A+ in all subjects. Marilyn does most of the schooling, and I do a little.

I'm reading Daniel Defoe's *Robinson Crusoe* to him, and I'm surprised he hangs in there, listening, commenting, and marveling.

Jonathan is taken up with the life and works of the detective, creating files, papers, tools, weapons, systems, "chemicals," rules, membership requirements for a club, etc. He has been at this for at least two years. He enjoyed some Hardy Boys, Power Boys, and other detective stories, though his interests are far broader.

He had great interest, as a toddler, in construction - bulldozers, backhoes, excavators, earthmovers, packers, and dump trucks. Paul bought him a tape, *Road Construction Ahead*, which he watched countless times, and I built him a sandbox wherein he and his friends spent many hours with several Tonka toys (by the way, Tonka toys have certainly cheapened in quality in recent years).

It has been disconcerting to me that Jonathan has taken great interest, almost an addiction, to warfare, shooting, killing, maiming, and even torture (I'm ashamed to say). It bothers me; I try to talk to him, and he seems to understand. Somehow (I don't understand), it seems like it won't be a problem.

On the other hand, Jonathan has had wonderful wisdom from God, the gifts of the Spirit operating - prophecy, visions, word of wisdom, and word of knowledge, for which we are thankful and edified.

His powers to reason and argue and of logic can be quite remarkable. He's also a very determined fellow, not one to give up easily. Yet when a foot is put down firmly, he knows it and respects that boundary, submitting to it.

All in all, I appreciate my son. He is a wonderful gift to us. I regret the pain he has experienced in the enmity between Marilyn and me, even to the point of blows once.

A grievous curse has been on our marriage and Jonathan hasn't been exempt from the effects, of course. I'm very confident, however, that if it hadn't been for Jonathan, Marilyn and I would have parted ways. I can't decide whether his influence in keeping us physically together has been good or bad or to my liking, though I expect it's the Lord's glue for now and needful for Jonathan. For his sake, I've remained. Whether such motivation is good or bad, acceptable to God or idolatrous, I don't know.

## **Particle - Love Alone Counts**

In the night, I knew that only love and a genuine personal relating to people would be of any value when all was said and done in life. Accomplishments and things are of little value in themselves; by themselves, they are essentially worthless.

### Particle - Conclusions on Herbert W. Armstrong

After some years, I came to realize [Herbert W. Armstrong](#) was partially instrumental in bringing some valuable truths to me. He preached that the Sabbath Commandment was never nullified or changed; that Christmas, Easter, and other religious “Christian” events were pagan, having nothing whatsoever to do with Jesus Christ; that the teaching of clean and unclean foods still applied, though not entirely as he taught; that it was wrong to charge for ministry; and that Jesus was in the grave precisely three days and three nights (72 hours) just as He prophesied, as witnessed in Scripture.

However, I never did receive a witness from God that Mr. Armstrong was a man of God, notwithstanding some good doctrinal teaching, an apparent integrity, commitment, and the will to stand alone against nominal orthodox Christendom. Jesus Christ never seemed personal to him. I saw excellence in the flesh, but I didn’t see a broken spirit, a man humbled by the cross of Christ. His righteousness was his own, by the Law and not by faith.

## *Page 8*

### Particle - Prophecies for Paul and Lois

Years before, I had a [prophecy](#) for Paul when he was still in his wayward state, the Lord saying that He was going to *“hook Paul by the nose and take him back where he came from.”* At the time, Paul was doing as he pleased and not seeking after the Lord as when he first began.

I also had a prophecy for Lois at that same time. It was also brief and sounded hard, but I don’t recall what it was. Now I saw Lois as a butcher, a brute beast that tramples mercilessly, defecating on all she leaves behind in the wake of her destruction. She smashes her way through those things godly and precious, sweeping them out of their places with brutish, hairy arms. She vomits before and defecates behind. The destructive one must be apprehended and strongly chained, yet for what purpose? Her nature is only to destroy. Therefore, she will have to be destroyed.

But has there been no faith, no piety? Why were such things spoken of her? She was deceitful, with not a shred of mercy, understanding, patience, compassion, or desire for holiness. She lived only for pleasure.

### Particle - A Revelation for the Reform Party

Though I knew full well that politics aren’t the ultimate answer for the ills of society (only Jesus Christ is), I realized that, in God’s economy of things, they still played a part, even as they did in Joseph’s, David’s, Esther’s, and Daniel’s days. Jesus advised to **“render to Caesar the things that are Caesar’s.”**

The Reform Party of Canada was a political movement founded in Western Canada and led by [Preston Manning](#), along with Ray Speaker and Stephen Harper - a movement that was, in my understanding, a strong, reasonable, moral, and valid reply to the morass of confusion in corrupt Canadian government and mainline politics. I had no doubt whatsoever that Reform policy made sense and, if implemented, would go a long way to improving Canada’s condition in many ways.



However, it was my conviction that with their platform, they stood as much chance of being elected by an undiscerning, unprincipled, and immoral public as did a snowball in a hot furnace.

It seemed the leadership came to understand this and took the step of seeking alliance in a larger spectrum. Thus came about the “United Alternative,” which Mr. Manning promoted. However, a diehard group of Reform party members, calling themselves “Guard 200,” opposed watering down their platform, insisting that the party remain true to all their principles, lest it **“lose its savor”** and **“go the way of all flesh.”**

It struck me that the Reform policy platform was a concentrate, the strength of which Canada’s electorate couldn’t swallow. The bitter medicine had to be diluted to a strength that sufficient numbers would accept. I also began to realize that by encouraging Reform members to accept some compromise, whereby they might gain office, I may just play a small, or not so small, part in bringing about a federal government we desperately needed.

So, I wrote a letter to Mr. and Mrs. Manning and other members, including the Guard 200. Here is the letter:

*January 29, 2000*

TO: MR. AND MRS. PRESTON MANNING  
Dedicated Reform Party Members  
Perhaps especially the Guard 200

FROM: Victor Hafichuk

Greetings and good will to all!

You are all in a momentous struggle this day for what is right, battling unseen forces which are determined to uphold corruption and evil. I believe I understand where the dedicated hard-core Reformers are coming from, both those who were there from the beginning and also those who have since joined because of the very important principles and policies upon which the party was founded.

I too have been in life, opposed to compromise, viewing all as black and white. I too have struggled over Mr. Manning’s decision to form the United Alternative. I had hoped that, with patience, courage, and dedication, the party would persevere, without compromise of any kind, until the goal of bringing a decent government into power was accomplished. God knows we are in desperate need of such.

May I now address the strong Reformers? I believe that while some see Mr. Manning as succumbing to compromise in order to achieve his goals, as I too have perceived or suspected, I must now, as of today, urge you all to consider seriously another perspective.

You are a medicine for this country. This country is very sick and in dire need of you. But as with many good medicines, you are in concentrated form. Concentrates of good medicine must often be diluted, or they will do more harm than good. This country cannot and needn’t handle you in full strength.

I believe you must lay down your lives for the sake of this nation if you are to have any hope of fulfilling your aspirations. You must allow yourselves to submit to that which you fear so

that, in diluted form, the party will be able to be that administered medicine in the mouth of Canada for good.

It may well be that if you don't sacrifice your strength to the dilution, the new compound will not be of sufficient strength without you to bring Canada back to health. Nor will you serve the present need in continuing to preserve your potency and unrealistically expecting the vast solution to be as you. I believe the power and perhaps also Canada's destiny rests with you. And as with medicine, I must agree that you stay on guard to see that dilution is not excessive or with altogether unfavorable elements.

I ask you, whether wisely or no (time will tell), to support your present leader. Consider that it is Mr. Manning's vision and understanding, at least in part, along with that of others, that has enabled some or many of you to see and to come as far as you have. He needs you perhaps as much and more than ever now. The man to follow is the one who lays all on the line. I think Mr. Manning is doing that.

It would be inappropriate to extol Mr. Manning's record and virtues here and now. I do not believe such to be the issue. If, as you suspect, Mr. Manning is being influenced by others apparently for bad and not good, consider that the appearance is seldom if ever the reality and things evil can and do work for good.

There is a time to live and a time to die, a time to gather and a time to scatter. The saints in Jerusalem were scattered wherein the Gospel was spread. Would it have been so if they had remained concentrated in their city? Paul speaks of how the Jews were scattered, losing their nation so that, in the wisdom of God, the Gentiles would be brought to salvation. By their "dilution," the world would know salvation.

He goes on to reveal to us that they would rise again and so will you if you sacrifice yourselves for good. Unless that seed falls into the ground, it abides alone, but if it falls, it will in due time be multiplied. Only those who lay down their rights will prevail.

Spiritual wickedness in high places would have you perceive each other as the enemy, to divide and to render you impotent.

If necessary, consider the Trojan horse and how the soldiers who risked their lives by hiding in it were able to defeat the enemy from within, whereas they were formerly unable to do so from without. But also consider that they could not have done so without those who helped build the horse and who did not accompany them initially into the stronghold. By way of concentration in conviction and principle, you are the soldiers within the horse destined to open the gates for others. Do not reject those others.

Come out of your trenches and bunkers, follow your leader into the battle, declaring with such as Esther, "If I perish, I perish." As with her, I don't believe you have any choice and, if you don't do it, there will of necessity be found someone else. God grant you to do the right thing.

Please feel free to contact me at any time.

Yours truly,

Victor Hafichuk

I received no response, not that I expected one. However, I was content to simply sow the seed and let things take their course. The Reform Party evolved into the Canadian Alliance, a watered-down version, and eventually watered down even more to the Progressive Conservative Party of Canada.

### **Particle - The Kind of God Men Seek**

People aren't looking for a God Who Rules, but for one who informs. They're looking for a god **they** can rule. They look for a crystal ball or computer. In prophets, they look for consultants, psychics - "insiders." They seek not to do God's will, but that He do **their** will. While seeking after God appears to be good, it is really the opposite of repentance. The mark of true repentance is not an enhancement but a denial of self for His sake, not for their own or any others'.

### **Particle - Letter of Testimony and Explanation to Reesor**

Trevor and I had the distinct, unmistakable impression that [Carol Reesor](#), who was appointed by Howard as executrix of his estate, was quite bitter toward us. We found out she was contrary to us based on things Howard had told her. I decided to write her, give my background, and explain the dealings I had with Howard and his family. I wrote a long letter telling her what the Lord had done for me, how I tried to deal with the Bensons, and what Howard did about it.

I pointed to the resulting wellbeing evident in Lois', Mark's, and Trevor's lives, as contrasted with the fact that Jason had [blown his father away](#). I asked her to consider the fruits, hoping she might change her attitude toward us. I wished her well, but didn't hear back from her. Her stance continued to be adversarial, as far as we could tell. There was no cooperation or consideration of our wishes at all.

### **Particle - Leaving to Be with the Lord**

On February 3<sup>rd</sup>, I simply felt to call Marilyn at the farm just to tell her I was leaving to be with the Lord, advising her that there was no cause for alarm or occasion to change anything.

### **Particle - A Fourfold Visit to the Farm in One Day**

What unusual activity on February 5<sup>th</sup>! I went to the farm four times - once to pick up Jonathan, once to pick up groceries, once to apologize to everyone for something, and finally, to love and to speak to them all about love. I gave each person a hug in the store but found myself praying a prayer for Lois only. In the hug, I picked up on the feelings and thoughts of each person.

My findings? Sean stood in superiority, despising me as a sorry soul. He was contradicting me. Lois didn't believe me, but couldn't resist the prayer. Marilyn exuded great bitterness toward me. She and Sean opposed me and insisted on their righteousness, rejecting anything that may in any way oppose, interfere, or even inconvenience their ambitions and goal of matrimony - all in the Name of God. Trevor was on neutral ground, though gravitating toward honoring Sean as his head. Mark was full of struggle, not knowing what to think. Mark also battled under pressure from Marilyn, Sean, and Lois to believe the prophecy. I blessed Mark that he might see and understand what was going on.

### **Particle - Lois' Vision: Victor, With Child in Arm, Others Following**

Lois had a vision on February 5, 2000, wherein I was walking with one child in my arm and leading another by the hand. There were many more following. The following passage came to mind:

**“Behold, I and the children whom the LORD has given me are for signs and for wonders in Israel from the LORD of Hosts, Who dwells in Mount Zion” (Isaiah 8:18 MKJV).**

### Particle - Barney Knelsen Calls

On February 6<sup>th</sup>, on the anniversary of the end of my [second fast](#) two years before, Barney unexpectedly called and talked for two hours, saying so many false and erroneous things that I didn't bother to debate or argue. I let him talk. He seemed fully persuaded of his convictions and secure status before God. We would see if he was justified in his persuasion.

### Particle - My Expectations of Marilyn

Marilyn says she will not leave me, though she has contemplated and even suggested she might yet do it. I foresee where Marilyn will “let it all out” and leave me physically for Sean, thinking she believes and does God service, obeying Him. I will have to suffer being “delivered over to the Gentiles,” in that I would be a public spectacle, a husband abandoned by his wife before all - friends, neighbors, business and farm associations, “the six” - everyone.

Sean will not pity. His goal is to have me out of the way entirely so that he can “keep the vineyard,” having slain the son, who came to collect the fruits for the owner. I see where I have to experience the repetition or carrying on of the sufferings of Christ at the hands of “my own familiar friends.”

If one wished to preserve himself, this scenario would be dreadful, but I don't find it so. On the contrary, I invite it; I delight in it. To die on behalf of others is my destiny, my *raison d'être*.

### Particle - Marilyn's Confession

On February 7<sup>th</sup>, Marilyn said something I thought was significant. She said, “It has been so important to me that everything appear right and perfect, and now here I am with the very opposite.”

Indeed, her stance appeared as adultery, and people were aware of what was happening with us. Les Mills and Barney Knelsen set their tongues to wagging with many. It was also my doing that they knew because I [wasn't supposed](#) to say anything to them, but I did. It was also my fault that we suffered this ignominy and reproach.

Prostitution doesn't appear as evil as adultery. Judas and Benedict Arnold are infamous because of their treachery, which is worse than if someone were simply honest and forthright in evil opposition. Men abhor treachery. Better to be hot or cold than to pretend to be one thing while being another. Marilyn was divided. She remained with me, refused to leave me, yet declared Sean to be her choice.

Marilyn had to be subjected to circumstances looking very bad, while striving to make things look good, in order to deal with the bondage and deception she had been living in. It seemed her

troubling went back to her youth when her [mother left](#), and Marilyn tried to make things look like they were just fine.

In our present circumstances, we were made to face the truth about ourselves.

### **Particle - Sean's Refusal to Help Me**

I had written letters to Marion Wright and Carol Reesor. I asked everyone's advice as to whether I should send them or not and to whom, and if there were other parties I should include. Sean disagreed that I should send the letters to Wright and Reesor. I couldn't remember or understand his reasons and when I asked why he disagreed, he claimed he had told me and firmly refused to repeat himself.

I called him arrogant, stubborn, and self-righteous. Was this a power conflict? I don't think Sean saw it that way consciously. Certainly, he had come to openly condemn me. In discussing this incident with Marilyn and him, the conclusion was that I was trying to figure things out instead of letting the Lord simply guide me.

### **Particle - The Division between Jonathan and Me**

Jonathan's aloofness toward me was disconcerting. We didn't have a father/son relationship of the kind I'd desired or expected. I feared he would be a source of sorrow as he got older and did his own thing. God, help! In failing to love and discipline him, I felt I had no right to ask God's help. I then had these words:

*"You should have done things right from the beginning. And now you expect Me to cancel the deserved fruit of your doings? Why did you allow him to watch all that garbage on TV – the sex, violence, coarse language, foolishness, worldly attitudes, and ungodliness? What do you expect – ungodliness without consequence? Why didn't you discipline him when he needed it? Why did you spare? And where was the proper attention he needed? No, you had to go whoring after money, after nursing your constantly delicate ego, sulking, pouting, and self-pity. No, you have no right whatsoever to ask Me for anything.*

*Even so, you know your sins and confess them, and I forgive you. And I will deal with your son."*

Were these words from God? I know my conscience condemned me, for I hadn't been faithful. But what parent can stand and say, "I am righteous; I did all things as I ought"? There is none righteous in anything, not even child-rearing. I've been so self-righteous with others, so dogmatic, legalistic, ignorant, brutish, unsympathetic, and so lacking in wisdom and understanding.

### **Particle - Second Thessalonians Two in Process**

The man of sin was being exposed in each of us because this was the Coming of the Lord. The man of sin was being unveiled and the Lord came to destroy him. That "wicked one" came with all power, signs, and lying wonders, with all deceivableness of unrighteousness because we hadn't had the love of Truth. The Lord sent us strong delusion by way of Marilyn's prophecy, causing us to believe it all. We were all judged at this time. Yet, we were granted hope. Though "judgment

begins at the house of God,” we had been chosen from the beginning to believe the truth. We would come to faith.

### **Particle - Revelation of Man of Sin and the Lord’s Coming**

On February 10, 2000, a great flood of revelation came to me, primarily on the Scriptures of 2 Thessalonians 2, 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18, Revelation 11, 1 Peter 4:17-19, Luke 17:20-37 and 21:5-36, and Matthew 24:1-44. I wrote down what I received on 13 pages, calling the document, [Man of Sin 1](#).

### **Particle - Word of the Lord for Us**

After recording what I received on those passages, I had words from the Lord to speak for Mark, Trevor, Lois, Sean, Marilyn, and me:

**To Mark:** *“You get so frustrated, feeling so compelled to change those things you find disagreeable and yet which you often find yourself powerless to change. You are subjected to circumstance you not only do not understand, but which you find disagreeable and even abhorrent, yet you are required to suffer these things, being exposed and subject to them... unto death. Submitting your all to wrong, you will be granted to change all that is wrong.*

*In the resurrection which follows on the heels of the death, you will be granted, in due time, the power and authority to change anything and everything not to your liking (God will give you the desires of a pure heart, as with all those He redeems), and as for the time you could do nothing about those things you hated, now no creature in heaven or on earth or under the earth will be able to prevent you from doing as you will, for you will serve the Lord in the resurrection, in His righteousness and judgment, not your own, and He will give you the power and authority to change all things needful of change. And they will be changed.*

**To Trevor:** *“You have sought to be comforted and secure, to be satiated with pleasures, to possess all that you would desire, unfettered and unprevented in pursuit of these things, without the price and without the pain which you abhor. Submitting to losing all and to all being required of you in that submission, though apparently evil and unjust, you will be delivered of that bondage of serving yourself and looking to your own good. Thereafter, you will look to the good of all others about you, to their needs, comforts, and desires, for their sakes and not your own, even as intently as you ever did for yourself. As you care for others, the nature to do so being restored to its original and empowered to serve as ordained, you will find need and desire of nothing, because all will be yours.”*

**To Lois:** *“You have sought to be recognized as an entertainer, as one who attracts, impresses, even astounds. You have sought to have, at will, the powers to get attention of as many as you would, and to hold it for as long as you would, to the degree that you would. You have desired that all would respect you and look to you for excitement, that you would be the center of*



attraction, to be 'where it is at,' and that you would miss nothing of all the action and pleasure, wherever it may be, no matter the cost to whom.

*Accepting and submitting with the heart to be the off-scouring of the earth and the labourer by the ashes and the dunghill, humbling yourself unto the death, you will be raised from the ash heaps to minister great goodness to all who may cross your path, which only you will be able to do as given you.*

*They will seek you out and look with eager expectation, their souls ever alert for you, even as birds for desirable feed at feeding time when it is past due. They will rush to you and you will not disappoint them. As often as they come to you, they will be ecstatic with joy and thankfulness for what you give them.*

*Nor will they forget. Their experiences will be as you had hoped – unforgettable. You will bless them with the blessings of the Lord, for their good and for the good of others. No longer will you crave attention because the Lord will have granted you in the resurrection to give attention to all, of the kind you have always desired of all. You will be joyful beyond your wildest imaginations, entertained by the joy of others, and for the joy of the Lord will they come. This is that true entertainment, pure and wholesome, for the glory of your Redeemer Who has purposed these things from the beginning.”*

**To Sean:** *“You have chosen the power of the throne and the crown. You have determined that all things should be yours, nothing excepted. With zeal you have sought to have the preeminence in all things according to your judgment and understanding, at the cost of the very lives of any and all others. You are no respecter of persons nor of their needs nor rights nor of any creature nor even of the Creator Himself.*

*In granting you the freedom and opportunity to acquire that which you desire, your way, though you have not had justification, you will learn that the purpose and essence of life is not that you should abolish your own boundaries, but that of all others. Instead of destroying fences for you to go in, you will destroy fences for others to come out. You will teach others to rule and to be free, and in so doing, your boundaries will disappear, the scales from your eyes removed to see that they were indeed boundaries as you saw them and not as they were. You will be free to do the will of the One Who makes you free and Who is Freedom, yet the One Who sets the boundaries of all things as they should be.*

*You will reign giving reign, rule serving, be free denying yourself. You have sought the highest esteem and honor of both man and God. You will know yourself, esteem others as better than yourself and, in so being, receive the highest esteem of others beyond your expectations, and be satisfied. You will be loved.”*

**Marilyn:** *"You have descended down into hell, clinging to your ambitions, hiding your face from the judgment of all those around you, spending yourself in vain attempts to appear presentable, acceptable, important, and admirable. You have strained to control all those things pertaining to your appearance and worth before men, seeking perfection with which no man could find fault or argue but would instead praise and adore.*

*Hereafter, you shall be known as having been a common riverbed rock among many, without beauty, uniqueness, or particular usefulness, but which was cut in half, only to unveil and display a wondrous crystalline beauty which would hold not only men but angels in awe. You will be in control, not by your own effort, nor by your own strength, but by your very nature, which was created and ordained for you.*

*In that beauty of spirit, revealed through your destruction, you will indeed exercise control, not because you desire it, for you will no longer desire it or feel a need for it, but because others will desire it for the beauty of person formed in you. You will no longer seek to control, but you will be controlled, and in that you will have control of all, reigning in peace and contentment. Such is the destiny of the one the Lord loves."*

**Victor:** *"From your beginnings, from the time when you first knew of Me and of My sacrifice, you have thirsted that they should kill you as they did Me. You have hungered for that unity and fellowship in Heaven ordained for all the saints, prophets, angels, and indeed all creatures with God. In that zeal, you have taken it upon yourself to persuade others to slay you, provoking men to hate you so that you could suffer the rejection of man, as did I. In so doing, you have suffered many things without profit, neither for yourself nor others, and have resented those very things you sought for.*

*But now you have been granted your heart's desire, as ordained from the beginning, and have been taken from among your very own to the end that you would be slain (yet not slain) and that you would partake with Me in the glory and the joy I have received. Only those who lose all for My sake are made worthy to have all that I have."*

That last statement reminds me of a prophetic word [sent us](#) by Delores Molnar in 1982 or early 1983, which said: *"God is ready to assume full responsibility for the one wholly committed to Him."*

## **Particle - Reactions to Revelations and Prophecies**

Marilyn and Sean are upset with me and I will certainly hear of it, likely before the day is through. They justify themselves and ride very high, not realizing it is against God they puff themselves up. Yet they do it in the Name of God. It is the exposure of the man of sin in them. Lois, too. The boys waver, but all will see the truth and rejoice in the end.

I feel the horrible heat of Marilyn's hatred toward me. I expect it to erupt openly, wantonly. She can't stand the thought of my being around for long. We think we've had our trials, but I expect we have yet to see the worst. "Hell hath no fury like a woman scorned...." I *know*.

### Particle - What Is the Gospel?

What is the Gospel, the message of the Kingdom? It is that the carnal man shall be saved! That God reigns over all... within as well as without. And if He reigns over all, to do all His will, His will being to save all, then all will He save, and all within, so that we needn't fear loss or destruction. He has accomplished the total reconciliation of all things. It is finished!

### Particle - The Third Fast

On February 13<sup>th</sup>, Mark came to visit me. As we talked, I found Marilyn to be a resistance to us and what I was saying. This day was **40 days** to March 24<sup>th</sup>, which would mark **3½ years** since Marilyn's prophecy of **Sept. 24, 1996**.

On February 14<sup>th</sup>, I began another fast, partially because Marilyn and I had another very heated exchange. She accused me of never having believed her prophecy and was quite upset about it. I wanted all of this over with.

### Particle - Two Witnesses

It was now about 3½ millennia since God delivered the Law to mankind, by and starting with His chosen people, Israel, when they came out of the iron furnace of Egypt. In Israel there have been those who kept the Law externally, in the flesh, and those who have believed internally, in the spirit, so the external and the internal. Since Christ, we have had those who believed on the Messiah and those who still wait for His appearing. Two witnesses declaring the Existence, Presence, Law, and Will of God. These two are being destroyed by the beast, yet surviving, creating much conflict in the world as a result.

God has ordained many representations of the two witnesses, including two men, whom some have said are Moses and Elijah; not true.

### Particle - Jonathan Asks a Question

On February 15, 2000, Jonathan and I went to a Reform Party luncheon at the Legion in Lethbridge to hear Preston Manning speak. There we personally met Preston and Sandra. Jonathan was the only child there in a room of 300 attendees.

When the question period came up, Jonathan whispered to me that he had a question. I asked him what it was, but he wouldn't tell me. He insisted on secrecy and asking the question himself. I called organizers over, they gave him his turn, and he stood on a chair and said, "Hi, I'm Jonathan. I have a question for you: Are you against genetically-modified foods?"

People were quite entertained, with laughter and applause. Mr. Manning turned the question over to Rick Casson, the MP in the Lethbridge area, who was also the federal opposition agricultural minister, I believe. The answer was a political one.

I signed up with the Reform Party and planned to support the Canadian Alliance. While I didn't particularly feel it was my calling to do so, somehow I wanted to support something that was evidently a considerably more ethical and moral alternative, as proposed in their policy platform, to our incumbent Liberal government. However, I didn't pursue anything more or get involved, except to support Ray Speaker (one of the architects with Preston Manning of the Western Reform Party) and Member of Parliament Rick Casson in a rare visit and discussion at their 3<sup>rd</sup> Avenue constituency office in Lethbridge.

### **Particle - Possible Permanent Parting from Marilyn**

The division with Marilyn was deep and apparently irreversible. I couldn't see having a life with her now, and if she remained with the others, particularly Sean and Lois, while I went on living for years, I couldn't see having any fellowship with them, either. It was apparent that my life would have to go its own separate way.

Was this that "ministry like unto Moses"? Was this the [scapegoat](#) taking away the sins of the people? While I had confusion over Marilyn's prophecy, whether to believe it or not, my life was required, as prophesied, and laid down for the others.

## ***Page 9***

### **Particle - False Piety or Godly Virtue?**

When I mixed with people anywhere in the world's activities and thought of the kinds of harsh things I'd said and done in the Name of the Lord, it scared me and caused me to ask myself, "What have I done? What have I been?" My answers: "A self-righteous, crazed, self-centered spiritual prig, or worse."

How was it I could feel that way? I saw humanity, kindness, friendliness, and goodwill with people, and I knew full well that unless I was that way with them, not only did I stand no chance of getting anywhere with them, they would surely string me up or at least abhor and avoid me if they only had some idea of what I had been all about. I thought of my writings, doctrines, declarations, and letters, such as to "the six," and of my dealings with Archie and his family, with Paul, Kerri, and others, and I shuddered. I wanted to crawl into a hole and die; I was so ashamed.

So then I asked: "Am I in the flesh, judging after the appearance when I mingle with the public and therefore doubting things God has done with us? Have we been spiritual idiots, deluded, ungodly, as so many religious groups and individuals are, doing the strangest of things to their own damnation?"

But there had been visions, revelations, and confirmations of God over the years regarding the things at which I shuddered; they occurred in reality with legitimacy before God.

Furthermore, there was no way that the world would understand the strange, apparently cruel, and repugnant things God was capable of doing to and by people, as in the Old Testament when father and mother were required by God's Law to lay hands on their own child for stoning to death by the whole community, if that child was found guilty of blasphemy or cursing parents or rebelling against them.

Nor would people of the world think anything but the worst of a God Who would have a man killed for picking up sticks on the Sabbath day (Numbers 15:32-36) or Who would slay a man and his wife

on the spot for a “harmless lie,” especially considering that they were sharing their goods with the saints and giving to the poor at the same time (Acts 5).

On the other hand, we could seriously question our spiritual status with God, in that it could certainly appear that God’s wrath was on us. Many had left us, divorced, and scattered. There were financial trials and losses, much bitterness, unpleasant relations with neighbors, constant strife and divisions among us, and adultery in my own home with my wife hating me and loving another man; there was my separation from the others and my isolation. There were physical problems - all of us finding it necessary to go regularly to chiropractors, and more.

“Lord, all I can do is leave all this with You and trust You to do what You will and must with us. I know nothing of myself.”

### Particle - We Must Be What We Are

We must be what we are and cease trying to be what we aren’t. Trying to be what we’re not is to play God and create ourselves in our own image. We profess to be wise and therein become fools, worshipping the creature rather than the Creator. We thus make God out to be a liar and fool.

If we accept what we are, then it’s God Who receives the glory. We let God be true in serving as He intended. Being what we are, we’re the manifest wisdom of God. A blade of grass manifests His wisdom, though it’s not an oak. But it would be a shame for the blade to try to be, or wish it were, an oak. The acceptance of reality is a thing of beauty; it is the essence of emancipation.

I perceived that the key to beginning my new life was to accept the way I’ve been. That, to me, was new meaning to the truth of laying down my life. It’s not merely a matter of giving up all that I have and am; it’s also accepting all that I’ve been. Has not the Lord [said to me](#) that His will was that I would serve Him with my infirmities? Surely, that was what it was all about. And isn’t this what reconciliation and rest are all about?

Even those accepting themselves as evil have more rest being what they are than those trying to be something they’re not. I must forgive myself. I feel like a caterpillar in a cocoon, part way between two states. Was this the “turning upside down” the Lord promised through [Don Morrison](#) in 1976? Was this the fulfilling of [Ernie Chadwick](#)’s Word and vision of 1976? Was this the promise of the Lord by [Mickey Patrick](#) in 1976, that He would break me?

### Particle - A Confession I Can’t Help

A journal entry:

Marilyn today has acknowledged that she no longer answers to me, that she does her own will, unapologetically; in short, she is no longer my wife. Today she threatened to leave. I am seeing that threat more as a promise now.

God forgive me, but I have to say it. She is a first-class bitch. I hate her. I can’t help it. I ***hate*** her. I truly want to see her eliminated, out of my life forever. I want nothing more to do with her. She is to me a witch and a first-class bitch. If such condemns me, so it does. God, I can’t help it. I can’t deny it any longer.

Mark said he recalled how in 1988, when I had come to Stettler for four days to help them move, I missed Marilyn and couldn’t wait to be back home. I no longer feel that way toward



her. I also know that Lois sympathizes with her. If I'm wrong as was Howard, and they both are victims of wicked husbands, so be it, but I want that bitch out of my life.

I suppose this proves me in the wrong, for it is written:

**"He who says he is in the light and hates his brother is in darkness until now. He who loves his brother abides in the light, and there is no offense in him. But he who hates his brother is in darkness, and walks in darkness, and does not know where he is going, because darkness has blinded his eyes" (1 John 2:9-11 MKJV).**

Hasn't Lois seen a vision of me walking in darkness? Furthermore, it says:

**"Everyone hating his brother is a murderer. And you know that no murderer has everlasting life abiding in him" (1 John 3:15 MKJV).**

Frankly, I hate them all. I sincerely declare, "I don't know anything." I do know that as I feel, the Scriptures condemn me. This 16<sup>th</sup> day of February is the third day of this, my third fast, and to what end? I don't know. Again, John says:

**"Beloved, let us love one another, for love is of God, and everyone who loves has been born of God, and knows God. The one who does not love has not known God. For God is love" (1 John 4:7-8 MKJV).**

I don't even want to love. I think I want to hate. It's like I don't have any choice but to be bitter and to hate. Truly, if things were to continue, I would be tempted to kill her - I really think so. Only the existence of my son would serve to stop me. Is this that threefold cord which that witch perversely sees as herself, Sean, and God? Am I the warlock Barny said I was?

### Particle - Why Am I Fasting?

What a hideous day I had! Marilyn said that I needed not to resist, but to let things happen, let go of losses, and look forward to what was in store. I believed that to be true.

I expected that this fast would be my death if I went a full forty days. Forty days would take me to the 3½ year anniversary of Marilyn's prophecy. Could I do it? Should I do it? Lord willing. It was tempting to "fulfill" the figures, to lose the weight, to see the reactions of others, and to do it in self-pity, thinking, "Who cares? What do I have to live for?" There could be many unworthy motives, but I had asked the Lord to keep me from myself and I remembered the proverb saying, **"A man's heart devises his way, but the Lord directs his steps."**

"Pride says, 'Go 40 days. Jesus, Moses, and Elijah did. It's a "prophet's fast"; you're a prophet, and big things will happen.' If this is the temptation of the enemy, God save me and preserve me from him. But I seem to have something beyond me taking me. I honestly don't know why I'm fasting. I think this is the end of all that has been happening in our midst."

### Particle - Prominent Writers Against Authority

Reading Weller, I find that he, along with Eby, Roach, Hawtin, Brooks, Ebaugh, Prinzing, Wood, and others, denounced any kind of man-to-man submission, perhaps even wives to husbands. Must I



reconsider what I've been believing, teaching, and requiring of others? We had certainly been contrary to what they taught, yet, obviously, each person did his or her own thing anyway.

I think what the Lord was doing was bringing us to the correct form of spiritual walk and authority in Him and with each other. I perceived there would be a recognition of the authority of the Spirit flowing from whomsoever, yet the Lord would give to submit to elders and to some who have authority over others, not in the flesh, lording it over others, but in the Spirit; it is Christ Who reigns through one placed in authority over others.

If I considered the [boulder vision](#), why would it show many bowing to me and not all bowing to each other, if Les, Barny, Mark, and all these writers were right? God didn't say, "You will all, every believer, sit on 12 thrones judging the house of Israel," but to the apostles only He gave this responsibility. No, there was an order to things, and I saw all those writers I mention as bitter rebels against God's authority. It is of such as them that Jude spoke:

***"Likewise also these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise dominion, and speak evil of dignities" (Jude 1:8 KJV).***

These writers and proponents of their teachings have spread the poison of rebellion everywhere, having elated, yet confounded and spoiled, many.

### Particle - Conflicts Continue

In this 5<sup>th</sup> day of fasting, I confronted Sean on his offense concerning letters to the farm. He was intractable. Marilyn asked me what was going on and faulted me for confronting him, accusing me of striving. She was the one who insisted I talk to him and now faulted me and questioned any value in my doing so. When I laid out my side at her request, she couldn't argue, didn't like it, and stayed neutral, knowing I had substance and just cause in my argument. But in her horrid bias, it wouldn't be long before she sided with him.

This I believed: God so hardened her toward me and so enamored her toward Sean that if I were laying on the ground, face up and starving, and he were to squat and defecate in my face, she would say, "Sean's right. See? There's the confirmation, Victor! It came from above, didn't it?" He could do no wrong whatsoever in her sight. He was to her an angel and I a despised, unworthy creature. ***"Lord, this is so hard! There is such horrid contradiction."***

### Particle - The Villains of Scripture Come Alive in Me

On this sixth day of my fast, I see myself as **Balaam**, who ran greedily after reward, using the things of God to gain worldly riches. I have been and still am so covetous. The record is there to bear it out, and added to that, it has been so in the Name of the Lord.

I've been as **Esau**. In saying to Sean that I would trade places with him, have I not despised my spiritual birthright? Surely! And he, as Jacob, has stolen it. I'm a fornicator, attending to and preferring the things of the flesh to those of the spirit.

**Ishmael**, Abraham's elder son and firstborn, no less, was a child of the flesh, as were Esau, Cain, David's brothers, and Joseph's brothers. Being children of the flesh, these all persecuted or despised the younger. Ishmael despised and mocked Isaac. I feel resentful to Sean for getting it all; I am jealous, envious, disgraced, and humiliated. He even has a

relationship above mine with my very wife. While she has never revered her husband, she certainly seems to adore him, and all see it.

Saul lost his anointing as King of Israel and perceived the favor of God and man with David. He resented it and persecuted David until the Lord destroyed Saul. God replaced Saul with David, who was faithful. Has God determined to replace me with Sean?

I am as **Nabal**, whose wife, Abigail, favored David over him. Nabal treated David rudely and selfishly after David and his men had been a great help and protection to Nabal's house. Nabal's servants came to Abigail, complaining of their master's great selfishness and foolishness, and warned her of David's intent of retribution against them. She intervened, brought gifts, blessed David, asked him to reconsider, and called her husband a son of Belial - a worthless, foolish person.

My wife has gone over to Sean even as Abigail went over to David. Haven't I been as Nabal? Who can doubt it? And as Nabal withstood David, after David had helped him and his household, have I not withstood Sean, who has helped us?

**"And it happened in the morning, when the wine had gone out of Nabal and his wife had told him these things, his heart died within him and he became like a stone. And it happened about ten days afterward the LORD struck Nabal so that he died" (1 Samuel 25:37-38 MKJV).**

I feel like what happened to Nabal is happening to me. Nabal died and Abigail became David's wife. Such is Marilyn's prophecy with us. Archie came to Marilyn, saying, "I can't talk to Victor. Let me tell you what's happening...." Danny's dream showed that the man beating the bags of fertilizer was wounded and had to leave. Was that me?

As Nabal was wounded by his wife, wherein his heart turned to stone and he died, so I have been wounded by my wife and have only to wait for my death.

**Cain** hated Abel because Abel was in faith and Cain wasn't. Cain was offended and killed Abel. I had a vision of Sean dying in my arms and I was crying for him. Would I be responsible for his death? It came to me that when Cain killed Abel, he wept over him, remorsefully holding him.

Have I not seen myself as a murderer? Does not that spirit of hate and envy reside in all losers? Cain killed Abel, Ishmael despised Isaac, Esau sought to kill Jacob, Joseph's brothers sought to kill him, Balaam sought to see Israel destroyed, and Saul sought to kill David.

I've been one who has beat his servants and lived for himself. The Lord even speaks of that, quite literally:

**"But if that servant says in his heart, 'My lord delays his coming,' and shall begin to beat the male servants and women servants, and to eat and drink and to be drunk, the lord of that servant will come in a day when he does not expect, and at an hour when he does not know. And he will cut him apart, and will appoint him his portion with the unbelievers. And that servant who knew his lord's will and did not prepare, nor did according to His will, shall be beaten with many stripes" (Luke 12:45-47 MKJV).**

Why did I have a vision of Marilyn, bitter and naked, even eating her own dung? Was she in great need and I failed to feed and clothe her, as a decent husband should? I've been as one who hid the talents he was to invest and failed to do so, out of selfishness and fear. What hope do I have? I've been as all the villains of Scripture. I'm the man of sin, that wicked one, the son of perdition, the Lucifer of Isaiah 14 and Ezekiel 28, the anti-Christ.

Yet the Lord will save me. He will redeem me. I will be transformed, raised from the dead to serve and worship Him in spirit and truth. He has promised and will fulfill it. The first Adam, the man of sin, is to be redeemed. *"You won't be dying. Will you believe Me?"* He said to me.

Somehow, I've had to be as I've been. There's no explanation. Haven't I offered to be the anti-Christ if necessary to do His will? Has the Lord taken me at my word with such an offer?

### Participle - End of Third Fast

I ended the fast on the sixth day, February 19, 2000, concluding I was fasting because of my conflict and frustration with Sean and because of Marilyn's rejection of me, declaring her allegiance to him. I decided that those motives were illegitimate and that I must face my fate.

### Participle - Sean Declares Marilyn His Wife

On February 21<sup>st</sup>, Sean called to reply and explain his talking to Marilyn the way he did, when we three were on the phone, in the spirit of, "I'm the head here." He said that he spoke to her as his wife, that he speaks to her that way at the farm, and thought that he should speak to her no differently in front of me. I had nothing to say and he nothing more. I thought this day was significant. He openly claimed her as his wife.

I awoke the next morning, having seen that I was one who suffered loss, my works being hay, wood, and stubble, burned up, but that I would be saved **"yet so as by fire"** (1 Corinthians 3:12-15). I recalled having once asked the Lord how I would be going, and He said, *"With fire."* I also saw that I was that rich man tormented in the flames of Hell (Luke 16:22-24), whose flames are not quenched, and eaten of worms that do not die (Mark 9:44-48). Well, if the fire can purify me, let's get on with it because I have no desire or intent to remain as I have been.

### Participle - Thanksgiving and Praise to God

At some point during this time, I picked up Merlin Carother's book, *Power in Praise*. As I read his teaching and the testimonies, I was given to understand that, indeed, the victory of the believer was received in giving God thanks and praise for everything, both good and bad. One could not lose or err in giving God the glory in everything. I thought, "Where have I been? Of course I should be thanking and praising God! That was one of the first things He taught me, back in 1974 - it was my first sermon! Where have I been? What's with me?!"

I set myself to giving the Lord thanks for my circumstances, not as I would have liked them to be or so that they would change, but to acknowledge that He was in charge and running all things well and that all things were working for our good. Confessing that Jesus Christ is Lord entails much more than speaking the word with the mouth. He wants our hearts. He gave me to concentrate on thanking Him.

Soon, with some fits and starts, victory began to happen - one step forward, one back; two steps forward, one back; one back again, then one forward, then two, then three.... I was beginning to experience victory, and it was independent of my circumstances. In looking to God, the circumstances didn't matter so much anymore.

My perspective and attitude changed. I began to have more peace, rest, joy, contentment, and assurance that all would be well. I was reminded of these words and they became real to me:

***"A Psalm of thanksgiving. Shout for joy to the LORD, all you lands! Serve the LORD with gladness. Come before His presence with singing. Know that the LORD, He is God. It is He Who has made us, and we are His. We are His people, and the sheep of His pasture. Enter into His gates with thanksgiving, into His courts with praise. Give thanks to Him, and bless His Name. For the LORD is good. His loving kindness endures forever, His faithfulness to all generations" (Psalms 100:1-5 HNV).***

### **Particle - Reminder of God's Commands**

It suddenly occurred to me that though God had said many things to me, He never said He married Sean and Marilyn. If I was all those bad guys, why had He told me so many things and given me visions and revelations? Thus far during all this trial, He said to me:

*Let it happen.*

*Lay down your life for them.*

*You'll not be dying. Will you believe Me?*

*Serve Me with your infirmities.*

*Be what you are.*

*Let go of the old.*

*Wait on the Lord* (I was told this several times).

*Don't try to figure it out.*

*Don't judge after the appearance.*

All these things He said to me, besides the visions, revelations, and prophecies concerning many matters.

Interestingly, on the surface here, it may seem like I was fighting my circumstances, but I wasn't. In fact, I didn't even want to! I was okay with them, and perhaps, oddly enough, even more for them now than for a reconciliation in marriage.

## Particle - The Rejection by a Companion

To have my bosom companion of over two decades push me away, wishing I were dead and she much preferring another, is about as painful an experience as can be, perhaps only second to losing an only-beloved child of one's old age. Yet I marvel at how God not only made me to bear it, but even to continue with it as it continued with me.

Sean called, probing and intimate with Marilyn, while she was reluctant to talk with me present. It is growing and coming to a conclusion. I rejoice.

## Particle - Let Everyone in Earshot Hear

A revelation came to me: When I am given to speak to someone, I should speak not only for the one to whom my speech pertains, but for all those around us. They all need to hear what is being said. I was not to hold back or mute my voice in any way, but to be bold. There need be no secrecy or timidity or apology. **"That which is whispered in your ear, shout from the housetops."** I was not to be ashamed of the Truth or anything good.

## Particle - The Man of Sin Revelations and Prophecies Delivered

The revelations and prophecies I received on February 10, 2000 were finally delivered on the 24<sup>th</sup> to the farm. I had waited, masticated, hesitated, deliberated, and finally decided to deliver. The Bensons were in turmoil and there resulted considerable discussion in what I brought them. It didn't seem that anybody questioned any of it. Lois began a fast the next day, upon Sean's suggestion, because she and Trevor were becoming very frustrating to Sean and to Marilyn. The fast would take 18 days to complete.

I was now steadfastly and spontaneously giving thanks. The next day would prove to be memorable indeed for me, one that I could never forget. Here it is, glory to God!

## Particle - Vision in Reality: An Encounter with an Angel of God

This is not a vision or dream *per se*. However, it is as a vision, because though it happened in reality, I was as in a dream and saw that which is not at all normal, as you shall see by my account (I recorded this on February 29, 2000, four days after the encounter):

On Friday, February 25, 2000, Jonathan and I were in Coaldale on the main street. He and I circled the block for a walk from the back door of John Wiebe's meat shop to the front of the Saan Store. As we walked, a young woman came out of one of the buildings (shops). She was casually, yet seemingly well dressed, slim, dark hair, not long, yet not real short. She was very comely, though not as the world perceives. Her complexion was smooth, without blemish, her countenance calm, confident, at peace, alert.

She looked at me, as though she took particular interest, yet didn't wish to let on so. I looked her in the eyes momentarily. She captivated me almost instantly, yet I thought it impolite, even wrong as a married man, to look at her too much, and so we went away, Jonathan and I in one direction, and she in the opposite.

I didn't realize the impact she had on me until that evening. It was then that I thought or wished that, given another opportunity, I would have paid more attention, dared to pursue further, even enquired of her. I don't remember seeing anyone like her before, not in reality, movies, or dreams.

She seemed so superior in quality to anyone I've known or seen, not so much physically as mentally and spiritually.

Could that person have been an angel? If not, I think her to be one of immense power, possessing a rare glory perhaps akin to the mythical or legendary Helen of Troy, of whom it is said men would readily lay down their lives. I've never known or heard of anyone on earth with such comeliness. It wasn't at all as this world counts attractiveness. The prettiest models and famed beauties are crudely groomed, pretentious, proud, artificial, counterfeit, hard, sin-sick in comparison. This creature's beauty gently and innocently radiated from within, perfect and natural. Her attractiveness was in her spiritual nature and character.

There was no pretense, only innocence. We were free to love each other without expecting anything of the other. Indeed, there was no need of expectation because the reality was that we belonged to each other and nobody would change that, or possibly even could. There was no risk, no ground for jealousy, no fear of loss or of failure. Our relationship was wholesome, unadulterated by any possible thing, guaranteed impregnable, incorruptible.

I was going to say that I loved her so much I could let her go free at any time, but such a statement is full of error. This is a new thing. With this encounter, I must redefine love, as I've never known it. It's not a matter of a greater measure of what I've known, not at all. A full measure and overflowing of what I've known couldn't begin to suffice. It would fall short altogether, like filling up with quarts of water to satisfy hunger - it doesn't happen; indeed, such an approach seems antithetical. No, what I experienced in a matter of moments was a love that knew no bounds, not within, not without. This love, if one could call it that, perfectly included the subjects for all time. There is no such thing on earth, though men and women wax eloquent and romantic while perhaps even exaggerating about their loves.

Yes, one wants to be with that person; yes, there is comfort, peace, joy, contentment, and true fulfilment... but somehow, because that love is spiritual and genuine, there's no need or desire for physical union.

She had a universality about her. It was as though nothing mattered, yet everything mattered. She was free of all things, yet took a responsible attitude toward them all, if one could call it attitude, because it was more of a nature or deportment than an attitude. If a deportment, it was unconscious, essential, not one purposed or cultivated.

They say, "A picture is worth a thousand words," but on that day I saw a face that had so much more, a face, it seems, that said all that could be said! I suppose such words may sound idolatrous and blasphemous. Of whom but God can such things be said? Yet, if He so wills to reveal Himself in a tiny portion of His creation in such a way, and I don't doubt His ability to do so, then is it idolatry or blasphemy to speak this way? Are not angels His direct representatives, in nature as well as in duty, expressions, or manifestations of Him?

Furthermore, concerning the face of this woman, more particularly her spiritual expression, and more specifically, her eyes, which were the core of expression, the windows of her being, it was that, as she looked at me, I was included in her. Nor was she invasive or obtrusive. She required nothing of me, yet freely shared all that she had and all that she was, without trying.

In so doing, I was utterly hers, willingly, defenselessly, automatically. Though I've said I hesitated to look long upon her for fear of being wrong, I suspect that any continuation past those few moments would be as though one went past glancing into the sun, where in moments more, one



could incur damage to the eyes. Even the residue of that encounter has impacted and captivated me so that I would willingly look into the sun (I long for it), knowing full well the consequence (or reward).

Yet if I had any suspicion of harm, I wouldn't choose to look, knowing it was evil. But I have to say that, though there lingers some degree of doubt and suspicion that such a creature can be, and can be only good, I judge her almost beyond any justification of suspicion; so pure, so good, so clean she seemed to me.

This is almost a fit of insanity! I related a part of this writing to Marilyn, and she marveled. She said, "Perhaps if you saw her again, as you say you wish, you might be disappointed." How true! Imaginations can surely carry one away, and I can consider myself rather vulnerable, given the present unhappiness and emptiness in our marriage.

But I would be perfectly willing to be disappointed! I have no desire for illusion or fantasy. If upon further examination, she turned out to be an ordinary person, I'd be disappointed on the one hand that I had not met a special creature of God after all, sent to me for good, but on the other hand, I would go on with reality, preferring so.

And if this person should reject me, I would know she wasn't at all the person I thought she was, and her rejection wouldn't hurt me because I wouldn't be rejected by someone I wanted to be accepted by. And again there's no fear of rejection from the kind of person I describe here. It is a win-win situation.

As I perceive her, and in the state she has left me, I would be willing to leave off all my inhibitions and pursue her person. If she were ordinary or married, fine. I wouldn't want to take anything belonging to another, no matter how wonderful, and if by virtue of the fact that I'm married and she was forbidden of God to me, fine.

I'd like to know who she is, why she is as she is, if it can really be true that she is as I have perceived, and why God has arranged all this. If perchance, God meant something for us, it would be an almost incredibly delightful thing to me, like literally dying and going to Heaven.

I know this: There would have to be no pain whatsoever to any, especially to Marilyn and Jonathan. Let her be such a creature that could satisfy my every longing, desire, and need, but if there was any wrongdoing whatsoever to them as a result, I reject it all out of hand, without any hesitation whatsoever.

What a strange, strange experience! It's as though I've looked into the eyes of an angel from God, never to be the same again. What power, what impact, and that, in a matter of moments!

**More.** As she was, I was becoming as I gazed on her. I was included in that universality. By universality, I mean something more specific and other than expected by common usage of language. All was hers, all was ours, and all was mine. She notified me in a few moments of silence that all was mine, that I was an heir to all that exists.

Gladly would I surrender all that I had, including my very life, to have what I saw there in her. It wasn't her but what she represented... another world, the true kingdom, everything. But I would not, could not, give up any soul, any person, not any. Why? Because in the surrender of all things for the acquisition of that which I saw and felt, perceived, and received, or which was indelibly,

yet invisibly etched on me, it would be an abomination to sacrifice any soul. She couldn't be bought, deserved, won, or earned any more than can be done with the sun; it's impossible.

I can't begin to express sufficiently what is there in me, about me. It's like every soul is an integral part of that whole, which is mine, nothing to be sacrificed, nothing to be hurt. Whereas we have had to forsake all, including parents, wives, children, friends, any and all possessions, and ambitions to follow the Lord, now we are to sacrifice or forsake nothing.

***"And in that day you shall ask Me nothing. Truly, truly, I say to you, Whatever you shall ask the Father in My name, He will give you." (John 16:23 MKJV)***

Instead of forsaking, we disciplined saints are to include everybody. (I'm not able to say what is there.) If I were to cause any undue pain to anyone in pursuing this woman, this creature, it would be like sacrificing children and virgins by fire to pagan deities to obtain their favor.

Her look at me seemed to be mirroring my look on her, as though "deep called unto deep." While she was impacting me, I sensed that she was almost experiencing the same thing with me as I with her. It is also possible, unless she is an angel (or perhaps even though she is an angel), that she ponders this meeting even as do I.

**More.** Because of the effect her countenance had on me, I have to conclude that every effort of ours to change someone for the better out of their faults, real or perceived - it doesn't matter - is vain, utterly vain, and not only so, but wrong, even criminal. I have no doubt whatsoever that her few split seconds of gaze move me to change more than all teachings, reproofs, admonishments, rebukes, and punishments man could place on me in a lifetime.

While there would be visible or perceptible changes performed on me by someone, those changes would not necessarily be for good, even if appearing good, even if preventing me from committing evils of all kinds. I wouldn't be changed in heart. But this countenance would move me to do anything good. It would perfectly inspire me to endure, to persist, and to ignore failure altogether, until I accomplished that good I knew to do, impossible as it might seem.

And it wouldn't matter if I eventually failed in the thing itself. The consumption of the commitment and drive would be the success sought for.

It is written that His (Jesus Christ's) visage was marred more than that of any man (Isaiah 52:14). I once had a [dream](#) of men damaging my face - I was a road, and the men were workers with picks and shovels. Men mar the face of God, and now I perceive that the face of God transforms in all goodness, not only the faces or visages of men, but their very natures. Indeed, no man can see God and live - he can never again be the person he was.

God, I don't want to control any person ever again, in any way, shape, or form... not a believer, pagan, neighbor, friend, foe, wife, son, not myself! I would far rather be a changer by spiritual influence rather than by words and actions. (Yet I know the Word must be spoken and the act done.)

I have to say something else. Though the person was apparently a woman, yet she seemed almost independent of sex. She was independent of everything, yet included by all, naturally or intrinsically committed to the good of all.

What would true evil be? True evil would be a disposition of any kind, to even the slightest degree, which would dislike, reject, oppose, even ignore the nature, the substance of the creature that unveiled herself to me for those moments. I saw goodness (integrity, sincerity, sobriety) such as I have never before seen in any person on earth.

I could almost write a book on the two seconds or so I spent in suspended animation, gazing upon this face, gazing into her eyes or, rather, being captured by that gaze. The whole countenance was unassuming, unpretentious, sincere, honest, prepared to lay all on the line; respectful, studious, very conscious, nonjudgmental, non-critical, objective, intelligent, discerning, sober, neither obliged nor obligating, yet willing to be obliged, but not foolishly confident. Her spirit was wise, unobtrusive (a very good word), free, generous, and unselfish in all ways. I would have to say that the apostle Paul's description of love in 1 Corinthians 13 expresses very accurately what I saw in this person. It's nothing at all as men imagine or describe love.

**More.** Uninhibited, but discreet, taking pleasure only in good, void of any retaliation (indeed, none can be found in such a nature, so foreign to it), truth of its composition as wood of a tree. (The day I met her, Lois began her fast, which climaxed for her in a freedom from a certain fear after 18 days of seeking the Lord.)

If I were to run into that person again and find her to be nobody unusual, I could be very embarrassed, yet I think God has given me something nevertheless, for which I should not be ashamed, but rather grateful. Lord, resolve all this for me.

Lord, thank You.

I know that love is not something that can be made or conjured up. I also know I don't have it as I perceived it in that person, but I would like to be there in it and it in me. Of course, one can say that if God is in me, and He is love, then love *is* in me, and I in love. Yet, I discern no such manifestation as I saw then. Lord, have Your way.

More would be occurring to me in the months to come concerning this visitation.

*Who says there is no God?*

## ***Page 10***

### **Particle - God's Reminder of His Sovereignty**

[Gene Knorr](#) called weeks before, testing the waters, asking how things were with us and how business was. Because business had increased, I told him so. "Well, that's normal for business to grow the longer it's around," he replied. I suspected he was hoping we were falling apart for not listening to him. But I thought, "Yes, I guess it's normal for a business to grow as people get to know the business is there."

A few days ago, Marilyn said that she was thankful and that the Lord was bringing business. Repeating Gene's thought, I said, "It's natural - many businesses and other things grow after a time of labor and pain for both believers and unbelievers. We shouldn't assume anything special is happening for us."

The Lord cut off the business abruptly, dramatically. Then last night, when Marilyn reported the sudden and strange drop, I went to bed and in the night the Lord showed me why. I was the

offender, unthankful, not giving the Lord the glory, taking things for granted, and repeating the words of the enemy.

The Lord went on to show us more. He showed us that He is in everything, present both in time and space, in all things, deliberately, actively upholding all things. Nothing is to be taken for granted - not business growth, not income, health, or so much as a single heartbeat or blink of an eye or flutter of a bee wing. He **"upholds all things by the Word of His power (Hebrews 1:3). 'I Am That I Am.'** He *is*.

**"And He is before all things, and by Him all things consist" (Colossians 1:17 MKJV).**

Our farm, its business and all, is floating on air. It is held up by God through faith. Others have what they have in spite of their unbelief (God is merciful to both the righteous and unrighteous, the good and the evil, the believer and unbeliever), but we who believe are learning to have what we have by faith; He requires it of us, unlike of others.

Confessing my unbelief, the Lord promptly restored the business.

### **Particle - Lois: To Fast or Not to Fast**

Six days into her fast, Lois called, hoping I would have something to say about it because she was having her doubts about going on. I did. I told her this fast is "for keeps," and that she needed to persevere in it until she knew she was done. Although Sean had suggested she fast, she informed me that, now, he and Marilyn were against it.

The reason for her fasting? I had said Marilyn's prophecy was false, strong delusion from the Lord. She didn't know what to believe and couldn't tolerate it anymore. She said she had to know, not from Marilyn, not from Victor, but from God. She thought she had once heard not only that Marilyn's prophecy was of God, but that it *was* God. She had to know.

She also said that she was out of control, particularly with Sean. Things were closing, but not, I expected, without one big, final, nasty bang, and that from Marilyn, with Sean's participation. They were so convinced of, and committed to, their aspirations, feelings, and dreams, which they believed to be of God, but which were His strong delusion. Well, the Lord deludes and He enlightens. He alone can do what is needed.

### **Particle - A Life of Praise**

I shared Merlin Carother's book with them. The Lord was alerting us to praising and thanking Him for everything. We will and do already have the victory in all our trials and tribulations in acknowledging Jesus' Lordship. By thanking and praising Him for what was happening to us, we were fulfilling the words of Romans 10:9-10:

**"Because if you confess the Lord Jesus..."** - We acknowledge that He is doing everything that is happening, that He is the Author and Controller of it all. In other words, He *is* Lord, not in title only, but in actuality.

**"...and believe in your heart that God has raised Him from the dead..."** - We confess that He is also over death - how much more loss and failure.

**“...you shall be saved. For with the heart one believes unto righteousness, and with the mouth one confesses unto salvation” (Romans 10:9-10 MKJV).** - By faith, victory in and over anything is guaranteed.

These verses are not merely an expression of an initial encounter with the Lord at conversion, they are a description of the saint's continual life of faith to the very end.

### **Particle - Sean Lets Me Have It**

Sean once adamantly told me to shut up while talking on the phone. This was in the presence of the others. Now he railed on me, telling me I was speaking “crap” to Trevor. Knowing Trevor was hiding away, I had been telling Trevor he couldn't sit on the fence forever, that he would have to make a decision. I didn't spell out the decision or the choices.

What right did Sean have to speak to me that way? Let's say that Sean was Abel and I was Cain. Would Abel treat Cain that way, or Jacob Esau, or Isaac Ishmael, or David Saul? I don't think so. In fact, I know David didn't speak that way to Saul. He didn't dare, in spite of the fact that Saul sought to kill David. David saw it as God's job to deal with Saul, which is what happened.

Here was Marilyn, loving and publicly choosing Sean over me as her husband, and Sean declaring to me and to all that Marilyn was his wife. She told me that the Lord was taking me to a great ministry as that manifest of Moses on the mount of transfiguration. And Sean was going to talk to me this way? It made no sense.

God even sent an evil spirit to torment Saul, and what did David do? He served to soothe Saul's torment by playing his harp. Even if I were as Saul, Sean had no right to speak to me that way. Had the Lord sent an evil spirit against me? Was I a wicked man? Neither Marilyn nor Sean would say so, quite the contrary. Indeed, I'd been tormented, but what was Sean doing? Was his conduct as that of David? He treated me with utter contempt.

Surely my [prophecy](#) of him over two years before was drawing near to fulfillment. I hoped in the Lord that He would grant me to deal justly with Sean and to forgive his offenses. His hour drew near when he would be humbled. I also perceived that I couldn't talk to him. He was unrepentant and convinced he and Marilyn were so right. He had become a law to himself. This angered me, yet I rejoiced for what the Lord was doing. Saul didn't think, feel, speak, or do toward David as I did toward Sean.

### **Particle - Revelations in Praise**

God is good to me. He has given me to praise Him and give thanks, encouraging me to accept whatever I must for His and righteousness' sake. He's showing me what He's doing. Not that He hasn't been showing me things all along - I've just been too hard and unbelieving to receive - so utterly unbelieving it boggles the mind. These things I write partially in code in my journal so that Marilyn will not see them, so fearful I am of her wrath, but here they are:

**One**, the Lord is delivering Lois, and she will be victorious.

**Two**, Sean will be exposed.

**Three**, The Lord controls both sides of the battle and coordinates them for His purposes (even as He showed me in the battle visions).

**Four**, Trevor will not be in agreement with Marilyn.

**Five**, I will have spent 3½ years in subjection to evil, darkness, and isolation. At the end of that time, I will not die, but be restored in newness.

**Six**, I've been worshipping not Jesus Christ, but the man of sin, by seeing myself as Cain, Ishmael, Esau, Balaam, Nabal, and Saul, men exemplifying the flesh.

### **Particle - Sean as Absalom**

As David's own son, Absalom, tried to kill David and take his kingdom, even defiling David's concubines in the sight of all Israel, so Sean has been doing to me. He plots to take all that is mine. David wept for Absalom when Absalom was killed. My vision of crying for Sean as he lay dying tells me that I am as David and Sean as Absalom, a vain usurper and patricidal murderer.

In my darkness and confusion in believing Marilyn, and as elder over Sean, I saw myself as Saul and Sean as David. Now I see that I am as David and Sean as Absalom, David's son. As Absalom, Sean has persuaded the people his way. He has determined to usurp my position and authority with all those with us.

As with Absalom towards David, Sean has shown no shame or mercy in his doings against me. As Absalom, he has defiled my marriage bed. He has openly criticized, severely rebuked, and treated me as one of his subjects before all. He has condemned Lois, Mark, and Trevor for talking to me, saying, "You should be talking to *me*."

Why did David have an Absalom? The Bible says it was because of his sins. So I have an Absalom because of my sins, and the chickens have come home to roost. Yet, though the Lord judged David for his sins, He spared him. God also has spared me, forgiving me. He granted David repentance, and He has granted me repentance. Absalom, however, He destroyed. So will it be with Sean.

### **Particle - An Injured Eye for Jonathan**

Jonathan came home with an injury, saying he had tripped and fallen, a stick poking his eye. It continued to get worse. I called people for advice and felt something happening. He went to bed, eye light sensitive, eyeball aching, and lower lid growing redder as time passed.

Jonathan awoke the next morning and came to me confessing that he lied to me. He had been cutting wood with his hatchet, and a piece flew up and hit his eye. I asked him why he lied. Was he afraid I'd be angry? "Yes." So I asked him why. I discovered he had been showing off to the neighbor's kids, the Den Hertogs. "They liked to watch me," he said. I had been warning Jonathan of boasting and showing off.

He awoke with a sore eye. I awoke thanking the Lord for the situation. Almost immediately, following that confession and his confessing and apologizing to Mark for giving him a nosebleed with his head, the eye began to recover marvelously. He was now fine.



## Particle - Praise God!

Today, March 7, 2000, Lord, on this 1260<sup>th</sup> day since Marilyn's prophecy (3½ Hebrew years), I praise and thank You for what is, not so You would change it, but acknowledging Your will and accepting at Your hand all things. **"In everything give thanks, for this is the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning you,"** and, **"Rejoice forevermore,"** and, **"I will bless the Lord at all times; His praise shall continually be in my mouth."**

**"Bless the Lord, oh my soul, and all that is within me; bless His Holy Name!"**

Thank You, Lord Jesus, thank You!

I awoke this morning praising God, and I shall not cease to praise and give Him thanks everywhere in everything. I owe it; He has it coming. I shall praise the Lord "for" and not "so that." He shall do whatever He pleases and it behooves us to accept *all* at His hand, both good and evil.

Who are we to know what is good or bad, what is needed or not, coming or not? Who are we but clay? Bless the Lord, every creature, always and forevermore. To God be all the praise and glory and honor and power and thanksgiving and blessing and wisdom and might and salvation and worship! HalleluYAH, HalleluYAH, HalleluYAH!

**"This is the day that the Lord has made. Let us rejoice and be glad in it!"** This is the day I have been waiting 25 years for. Bless the Lord! Praise the Lord! Today, I awoke for the first time in my life praising the Lord Jesus. Thank You, Lord Jesus! And I shall not cease for anything to give You the praise due to You, Lord. Thank You for filling my mouth with praise! Thank You, Lord Jesus, thank You!

**"Praise the Lord: for it is good to sing praises unto our God; for it is pleasant; and praise is comely."**

**"Let the high praises of God be in their [saints'] mouth, and a two-edged sword in their hand; to execute vengeance upon the heathen, and punishments upon the people; to bind their kings with chains, and their nobles with fetters of iron; to execute upon them the judgment written: this honor have all His saints. Praise the Lord!"**

**"Let everything that has breath praise the Lord! Praise the Lord!"**

## Particle - Puffy-Eyed from Crying

On this March 8<sup>th</sup> morning, I awoke with a puffy left eye. I had dreamt of being at George Warnock's, crying much for their autistic granddaughter, desiring the Lord to heal her. There were many handicapped people there, and I was wondering what the Lord was going to do. Warnock's daughters were there. It seemed he had three, but I don't know that is true. It seemed a junk dream to me. I was crying so hard in the dream that I was really crying in my sleep. I was laying on my left side.

## Particle - Compelled to Speak Openly

My eye continued to get worse. Praying, I was told I had to give my latest revelations, [Man of Sin 2](#), to those at the farm. In deciding to do so, my eye immediately began to get better.

Within four days, both Jonathan and I suffered problems with our left eyes, which condition grew steadily and considerably worse, and when each of us obeyed God, the problem dramatically cleared. It was also on the second day for each of us that the trouble cleared. It was strange for me to awake with a swollen, yet painless eye, and this, two days after Jonathan had his eye problem. We had never had eye problems previously.

Marilyn called from the farm, upset at my sending the material to them. She said, "I'm not going to read it. That's all I have to say," and hung up.

Talking to Mark the next morning, he said the paper was timely and that he was thankful. He said Sean had been wrestling in the past weeks (I had begun to avoid Sean, knowing there was no talking to him at all). Now Marilyn and Sean were upset with Mark and me.

However, with them adamantly firm on believing the prophecy, Mark became very upset - the worst ever, he said. I told him to praise the Lord and give thanks. Mark said that Jonathan was also quite disturbed at the breakfast table because Marilyn and Sean were very angry with Mark.

### **Particle - Lois Wavers in Her Fast**

I told Lois on her 15<sup>th</sup> day of fasting that she needed to persevere; she had nothing to fear; she mustn't be afraid of anyone or anything; she must receive for herself from God, and believe what she receives. [By the way, all the fasts mentioned in this book are "water only."] As she continued, she began to see things about herself that weren't pleasant. She began to see herself as having been a whore, having hatred and bitterness toward me, having sympathy for Marilyn, and taking pleasure in what Sean and Marilyn were doing.

### **Particle - Did I Kill Alaythia?**

It suddenly hit me that I had killed Alaythia, a daughter I could have had were it not for my whoring after money and consequent bitterness toward God. When Marilyn had her [miscarriage](#), Archie had [prophesied](#), saying, "The Lord showed me that you lost the baby because of bitterness toward God for the stock market."

Jonathan might have had a five-year-old sister by now, Bob Gregson and Paul's dreams fulfilled. Marilyn and I brushed off what Archie said. So hard was I that it wasn't enough to lose a child and regret it. I had to lose the rest of my family! How hard and blind! How wicked!

"Lord, I have grievously sinned against You. I didn't even know or see the price I was paying, and I'm sure I see but the scratching of the surface. I murdered our own child. Is that why Marilyn hates me so, Lord?"

### **Particle - A Pestilence Stalks**

Back in the 80s, the Lord spoke to me, saying, *"There is a pestilence that seeks to destroy you from before My face."* So often have I been troubled with dreams and thoughts, particularly in the night. I would come to the conclusion that what I had just felt and thought about Marilyn's miscarriage wasn't true.

## Particle - This Is That Breaking

Prophesied by [Mickey Patrick](#), [Don Morrison](#), [Theo](#), and [Ernie Chadwick](#), all in 1976, that I would be broken, I realized it was now coming to pass. Mickey also said that the Lord would break me by causing me to be still. I have had to *“let it happen.”* Three times I was told. I had to sit and do nothing for nearly 3½ years now, from **September 24, 1996**.

A man by the name of Bill Britton once had a vision he recorded and published, called [The Harness of the Lord](#). I have always felt like that vision applied personally to me (not that it doesn't apply to others).

## Particle - Marilyn Afraid and All Jerusalem with Her

I told Marilyn I believed that everyone was afraid of her. Lois confessed so, and I know I've been afraid of Marilyn. I also suggested to her that she was operating in black faith, that is, a carnal one, which, in its own right, also had power to do miracles (1 Corinthians 13:2), as was the case with Jannes and Jambres, the sorcerers withstanding Moses and Aaron in Pharaoh's court.

While one might blame Marilyn for people being afraid of her, ***“fear of man brings a snare,”*** and the fault is with those who fear. The fearful, the Bible says, have their part in the lake of fire, along with every other kind of sinner (Revelation 21:8).

Marilyn was very fearful; she infected all with fear. She dominated because she feared, and in dominating, she injected fear into others. What a horrible condition! And I have been subjected to fearing her. How many husbands have been recorded to turn to drink, hobby, sport, drugs, occupation, or mistress to gain respite from a domineering wife?

People live in fear, which they inherited from eating of the Tree of Knowledge. The first thing Adam and Eve experienced upon eating of that Tree was fear (Genesis 3:7-10). In their insecurity, wives pass fear on to their husbands who have chosen to believe and follow them instead of God.

## Particle - Lois Ends Her Fast

On March 14<sup>th</sup>, **forty days** after I [prayed for Lois](#) at the farm, she ended her fast. She received answers of the Lord for her questions she put to Him. I told her that she needed to stand by herself in what she received and that the battle would be great. I told her, *“Hell will break loose,”* when she spoke.

She said she had become unsettled soon after my praying for her.

## Particle - Marilyn as Jezebel

In giving thanks to the Lord for my circumstances, I was seeing a remarkable similarity between Jezebel of Revelation 2:20-23 and Marilyn. Here is the passage and the similarities:

### **Revelation 2:20-23 MKJV**

**(20) But I have a few things against you because you allow that woman Jezebel to teach...**

Marilyn and Sean both originally insisted that they be free to talk together and that Marilyn counsel Sean. Marilyn also took it upon herself to direct the others.

**...she saying herself to be a prophetess...**

Marilyn prophesied and not only so, but has insisted that we must believe her and her prophecy as the oracle of God. She calls herself a prophetess.

**...and to cause My servants to go astray, and to commit fornication, and to eat idol-sacrifices.**

By choosing another husband instead of me in the presence of all, did she not go contrary to God and the counsel of Scripture, thus teaching both spiritual and physical fornication and the worship of other gods? Indeed, how could one see it any other way? Were not others influenced to think, speak, and do the same? Does not a little leaven leaven the whole lump?

**(21) And I gave her time that she might repent of her fornication, and she did not repent.**

The Lord has said to me, *“Let it happen.”* He was giving her time to repent of her fornication. It had now been over three years and, thus far, she hadn’t repented.

**(22) Behold, I am throwing her into a bed, and those who commit adultery with her into great affliction, unless they repent of their deeds.**

If by choosing Baal instead of God, the children of Israel committed adultery, how was Marilyn’s choosing Sean instead of me not counted adultery? The Lord promises a bed of great affliction for all partakers of adultery if they don’t repent.

**(23) And I will kill her children with death. And all the churches will know that I am He Who searches the reins and hearts, and I will give to every one of you according to your works.**

It’s remarkable that the Lord didn’t say He would kill *Jezebel* with death, but *her children*. I hadn’t seen or heard that Marilyn would die, but I did have a [vision](#) of Sean dying.

The name “Jezebel” is defined as “non-cohabited, un-husbanded.” Remarkable! Marilyn, in spirit, had no husband now. She moved, contrary to the Law and will of God, from under the covering of her true husband, and the second is not her husband.

(Another, yet similar, Jezebel took over the power in Israel as King Ahab’s wife - see 1 Kings 16 to 21 - and did wickedly.)

Marilyn said to Sean that when he believed the Lord, that is, her prophecy, all this battle would end. I suspected she meant that I would die. That explained why Sean was growing so strong against me, not in righteousness, but in arrogance and presumption.

**Particle - Conversation with God about Mills and Knorr**

“Lord, they brought Scripture.”

*“As does Satan.”*

“Lord, they brought the Law and spoke against sin.”

*“So did Job’s friends.”*

“Lord, they had much true doctrine.”

*“As did the Pharisees.”*

“Lord, they talked about You.”

*“Was it about Me or doctrines of men? Did you ever hear them speak of Me, bless Me, pray to, or praise, Me?”*

“Lord, they never attacked me. They sympathized with me.”

*“Oh? What did Gene do here in your house, there at the farm, over the phone? Was Les honest and straightforward with you or vacillating, fickle, and critical of your words? And what about Les’ friends, Barny and Mark? And what about Mark and Amanda’s friends, Debbie and Erin? And what about Les and Penny’s friend, Trudy? You spoke to her and she’s better for it, but have you heard from her? Why not? Don’t you think Les had anything to do with that? Where did Barny get all his notions about you? And why aren’t they receiving you now?”*

#### **Particle - Does TV Violence Beget Violence?**

People attribute the power and glory due to God alone to many other things or persons, without realizing it. It is said that violence on TV conditions children to be violent. Yet long before TV came into being, there was great violence in the earth in all cultures. In the second generation of man, elder brother killed younger brother.

Because there was violence before doesn’t logically mean that TV violence isn’t corruptive. However, if violence causes violence, why is it that when men come home from war, they often don’t wish to even talk about it? Why is it that many who see it in movies and TV don’t practice or approve of violence?

Those who practice and copy what they see for violence on TV are also void of discipline, instruction, wisdom, knowledge, faith, the Law, and the love of God in the home, particularly in their formative environment. No, God keeps those He chooses by providing them with all the good things I mention.

#### **Particle - Revelation of Lois’ Battle Vision**

On March 17<sup>th</sup>, Day 1270, I received revelation of the meaning of [Lois’ vision](#) that showed me raising my hand and stopping the battle. She had the vision 144 days before, on Day 1225 of the prophecy. The battle was in Lois, my [praying](#) for her led to its termination, and now Lois told me her fear was gone and she had peace since receiving revelation from God concerning our situation.

#### **Particle - Marilyn’s Vision and Prophecy: Foundations Crumbling**

In the evening of March 17<sup>th</sup>, Marilyn had a vision, wherein she saw all foundations crumbling, with clouds of dust everywhere, leaving only the Lord, as represented by a thin silver pillar. She prophesied that everything was going to be shaken and those who didn't have the Lord as their foundation were going to fall.

### Particle - Consecrating Jonathan

When reading Exodus 22:29, I realized with horror and shame that I had never consecrated my firstborn son to the Lord, acknowledging the fact that Jonathan is not mine but the Lord's. Today, I joyfully consecrated him, thankful for the privilege of being able to give him to You, Lord. Thank You! He is Yours!

### Particle - Vision: Lois Shoots Bear

After her fast was ended on the 14<sup>th</sup>, having received an answer from the Lord, Lois was hesitant to declare it to others, though she had told me. What had come to her during the fast was that she had been a whore, and that Marilyn was a false prophetess or that Marilyn's prophecy concerning my dying, and her marrying Sean, was false.

I had a vision at 2:00 AM of March 18, 2000, while in prayer and thanksgiving to the Lord. I saw Lois standing with her back to me, leaning on a large wooden crate about four- to five-feet cubed, while a great and raging bear was charging at her. I had handed her a long, old-fashioned loaded musket. Somewhat apprehensive, she rested the gun on the crate, took aim, and fired at the bear, hitting it squarely in the chest, surprising the bear. The bear kept coming for a few yards more, though its chest had been ripped open. Surprised that it should be a victim, incapacitated so quickly and easily, it finally collapsed, dead.

### Particle - It Is Finished

On the 18<sup>th</sup>, I took a two-hour nap, unusual for me. When I awoke, I knew and said, *"It is finished."* It was done.

I talked to Lois about declaring to all the others what came to her. She finally got up the courage to do so on Sunday the 19<sup>th</sup> by telephone. After she spoke, I told her and everyone else the vision I had. In declaring to everyone what the Lord had told her in the fast, Lois realized her fear was gone. She had been afraid of Marilyn and Sean, perhaps primarily of Marilyn, but no more. She had the victory over fear and over herself.

Marilyn was in horrible distress. What a battle! And what contradiction! She danced about and tried to find any way to see herself as right. She refused to be wrong and denied things that were clearly evident. She alone was in the light and all others who disagreed in darkness.

### Particle - Hugs Tell the State

I recalled the day at the farm when I [hugged everyone](#). In hugging, I was able to read spirits. Trevor was neutral; Mark was pondering, struggling, yet unbiased; Marilyn was saying, "I'm not your wife!"; Sean, "You're pitiful; you've lost, I'm in charge, and that's the way it is, but I'll give you a big hug now that I sit in the victory seat" (patronizing); Lois, "I'm with everybody here, and you're wrong, but why are things this way?"



However, it was only for Lois that I prayed, as I hugged her, that she would see clearly and understand what was going on, that the Lord would give her what she needed. I asked the Lord to show her mercy and to give her healing and deliverance.

### **Particle - Marilyn, What Do You Believe?**

I had recently written three papers ([1](#), [2](#), and [3](#)) on the revelations God gave me concerning the man of sin and how He was dealing with him in our midst. I asked Marilyn if she believed what I was receiving and saying. She said she couldn't answer. Indeed, we were dealing with the "mystery of iniquity" and a cunning enemy that practices evasion, smoke and mirrors, deception, and denial, insisting on a righteousness that only God possesses and that He does not claim for Himself in like fashion.

When I talked to Lois, she said Marilyn's power was broken, and that was what was referred to when I heard, "*It is finished.*" I know that word also referred to what was done in me and the others. Lois was also delivered, confirmed by the vision of fatally shooting the bear, a formidable, dangerous beast.

As for Marilyn, it was as though I had on my hands the greatest spoiled, selfish brat that ever lived. Pondering the matter, I received that Marilyn had to be intractable for my sake - she was my spiritual conditioner. I had to take a solid stand, believing the Lord instead of her, whom I had made my god all these years. I was guilty of idolatry, making her to be as God to me when seeking answers and guidance on many matters in the name of confirmation from God.

### **Particle - Focus on Lord, Not on Evil**

I dropped into St. Martha's Retreat Center on Scenic Drive in Lethbridge, enquiring as to what it was all about. I met two nuns and borrowed Merlin Carothers' *Prison to Praise*. I came away feeling somewhat bad.

I had attacked false religion and its adherents. I was reminded of the [prophecy](#) saying I had provoked people to persecute me so that I would suffer as did the Lord. I never got anywhere with provocation. Now I saw that I must do and be different - patient, tolerant, understanding, merciful, compassionate, gentle, focused not on evil or evil ways and attacking those, but focused on the Lord, in peace, joy, righteousness, and thankfulness to Him.

I had closed off nearly the entire world from myself and from all of us in this masochistic, self-righteous, holier-than-thou conduct. I had only myself to blame for the alienation. I expected that things would be turning and that I would have to destroy most of my writings or change them drastically.

## ***Page 11***

### **Particle - Lois to Believe and Receive More**

On March 21<sup>st</sup>, I received that if Lois believed what she received, she would be given more. The next morning I called to tell her so. She said she had received the same. When Marilyn heard me tell her this, she went into blackness. When I confronted her, she said she heard of me, as I spoke to Lois, "He is strengthening the hands of the wicked."

I then looked up such a verse:

**“Because with lies you have made the heart of the righteous sad, whom I have not made sad; and strengthened the hands of the wicked, that he should not return from his wicked way, by promising him life” (Ezekiel 13:22 KJV).**

I wondered, “Marilyn heard words that are quite Scriptural. Could she be hearing from God? Is that what I am doing?”

Marilyn said, “What is everybody going to say when they find out they’re wrong?” I know what I would say: “I am (or was) wrong!” I don’t have a problem with that.

I realized that what it boiled down to was this: Both sides are with power, claim to be of God, are quite supernatural, and God has made it so that both sides are convinced. We are in a deadlock and God must expose the wicked and manifest the righteous. God alone will answer by fire and settle everything once for all. I have always wanted to see that, even as God did with Elijah and the 450 prophets of Baal.

I was getting so weary with this conflict; I’d be glad to have it fall out either way. Better for me to be wrong and out of here than to live in doubt and turmoil. There certainly was power with Marilyn and Sean, and we could be made to look so selfish and wicked, but I could do nothing but stand and believe what I was receiving. What a battle!

#### **Particle - Lois’ Vision: We Stand in Line against Enemy, Praising the Lord**

On March 23<sup>rd</sup>, Lois had a vision. She saw us all standing in line. She writes: “**Victor was at one end and I at the other. The enemy was approaching us and Victor stepped out in front of the line and I with him. We began praising the Lord and the enemy was stopped.**” (Mark also saw Lois as a warrior.)

#### **Particle - Reluctance to Report Revelation**

Having written [Man of Sin 3](#), concerning the revelations God gave me, I hesitated to share it with the farm, fearing repercussions, not the least of those being that I might fulfill the vision of Sean dying. However, I began to thank the Lord, and as I did, I was reminded of David and Absalom. I opened my Bible to find the passage. It fell open to a page out of over 1500, and my eyes immediately fell on the caption at the top that said, “David laments Absalom.” My eyes immediately fell upon the last verse of 2 Samuel 18, wherein David said:

**“O my son Absalom, my son, my son Absalom! Would God I had died for you, O Absalom, my son, my son!” (2 Samuel 18:33 MKJV)**

I realized that David had to pay for his sins, that Absalom had to die, and that I had to speak.

#### **Particle - Three and a Half Years Today**

I was struggling with what to do about [Man of Sin 3](#) when Jonathan called me to report that Sean was “on mom’s case” the day before and that morning, as at other times, telling her what he wouldn’t let her do. Jonathan said that she wasn’t happy, that she was angry with Sean, stomping off from him and doing things to him that she wouldn’t do to me. I sit and wait.

#### **Particle - Obedience Before Lip Sacrifice**

I awoke on the morning of March 25<sup>th</sup>, asking the Lord why praise wasn't flowing from me in the past few days. I was finding that while I could **"enter the gates with thanksgiving,"** I couldn't **"enter the courts with praise"** (there must be both or there is something amiss). The Lord immediately told me I had to obey first.

I sent [Man of Sin 3](#) and [The Spectacle](#) to those at the farm, knowing full well there would be fireworks, particularly from Marilyn. Both papers were an indictment on us all, especially on Marilyn and Sean. Upon sending the papers, it ceased to rage, and I was again at peace and able to praise the Lord freely.

These papers boldly describe our situation and directly indict the perpetrators. I had held back in disobedience and was now free again. This day, March 24<sup>th</sup>, was exactly 3½ years since Marilyn's prophecy of September 24, 1996.

### **Particle - The Pot Calls the Kettle Black**

I had told Jonathan that what his mother was doing was evil in God's sight. She came to me later, complaining about his reaction to her, saying he wasn't respectful. I said, "Who are you to expect respect and obedience?" Nevertheless, I said I would talk to him.

He and I had a campfire outing that afternoon. I asked him what he would ask for if God gave him a request. "That mom would forget about Sean and that he would become like everybody else, just an ordinary person." That, above all, was what he wanted.

Marilyn has had nightmares all our married lives, from which I would awaken her when I heard her moaning. She was having them now. When I woke her, she complained that I was at fault for how Jonathan was acting. I told her that, **one**, her life preached far louder than words; **two**, she could hardly expect of others that which she didn't live by herself; and **three**, how was it she expected others to change to her liking when constantly insisting that she couldn't change from her course and desires? Should she not heed her own words?

She then accused me of anger, fighting God, being out of control, and that she couldn't talk to me!! I ceased talking; there was no use. The very things she was guilty of, she accused me.

### **Particle - Puzzle Pieces Placed**

(Please be aware, dear reader, that in this, and all other portions of the Theo-autobiography, I am expressing how I saw things at the time, when going through great trial and difficulty. Bear with me and know that all will be made clear in following Parts of the Theo-auto, by the grace of God.)

I began to pray and thank the Lord for the circumstances and suddenly it occurred to me that Marilyn had spiritual possession, that she was under demonic control and needed deliverance. My breath was taken away! All these years I've been married to a demon-possessed woman and didn't know it?! How shocking! "Lord," I cried, "why didn't You tell me? How can this be? Why?"

It wasn't for me to ask or know why, only to believe what I was told. Everything was with purpose and I would understand later why things had to be this way. I believed it had something to do with the overturning of women's power over men, ever since Eden. Somehow, a historical event was happening here, but we would understand later.

Then I began to enumerate and put together many pieces of the puzzle:

**One**, Lois received that we were to shout out the *deliverance*.

**Two**, Marilyn said she couldn't change. That speaks of spiritual bondage.

**Three**, her enmity was extraordinary and strange. It is the same enmity I'd seen in three others toward me - [Lil Hafichuk](#), [Fred Hafichuk](#), and [Dennis Evasiuk](#) - a demonic hatred.

**Four**, Satan is a rebel, and Marilyn rebelled against me.

**Five**, Satan is a murderer, and Marilyn wanted me dead.

**Six**, Satan is a liar, and Marilyn was deceptive with me.

**Seven**, Satan entered Judas, who betrayed. Marilyn betrayed me.

**Eight**, Satan preaches the Scriptures, but doesn't live by them. He is contradiction, and Marilyn has been in utter contradiction.

**Nine**, there was no reasoning with her.

**Ten**, Mickey Patrick once rebuked devils in Marilyn (1976), not that there were any cast out.

**Eleven**, Marilyn had incited me against many over the years, always complaining and accusing others and subtly persuading me to say or do something.

**Twelve**, her mother was full of devils, and recently I was seeing such a similarity in their attitudes.

**Thirteen**, control was her thing. It is Satan's thing. It is not God's thing.

**Fourteen**, I lost my joy in the Lord when I married her. She fretted against everyone and everything, though she always masked it.

**Fifteen**, she had constant nightmares, many of demons attacking.

**Sixteen**, false prophecies - this last [great one](#), the urging to stay in the [stock market](#), her [dream](#) of 11 saved back in the early eighties, which never developed. She heard so many things that have been false, many of which were patently obvious and which I've recorded.

**Seventeen**, she had great bitterness. How can one be so bitter and not have devils?

**Eighteen**, Lois said she received that I needed to pray for Marilyn. For what? I now knew that it was for deliverance, but when?

**Nineteen**, in Revelation 2:24, speaking of Jezebel, to whom I have paralleled Marilyn, it refers to knowing the "depths of Satan."

**Twenty**, Marilyn opposed fasting and many times tried to dissuade me from it (and maybe had). She was opposed to Lois' fasting, and on the 14<sup>th</sup> day, before Lois received the answers she was

seeking from the Lord, Marilyn suggested there was no point in the fast. Immediately after, Lois received answers concerning Marilyn and the situation.

**Twenty-one**, she and Sean bristled at our recent praising the Lord.

**Twenty-two**, Marilyn saw me gaining weight and commented on it, yet fed me anything and everything, baked and cooked pastries, etc., and left them out for me to eat. This morning when I finally decided to do something about my weight, she tried to tell me nothing would work, that my fate was sealed. Could this be anything other than the enemy?

**Twenty-three**, all these years, Marilyn opposed my witnessing to others and stood in agreement with my enemies.

**Twenty-four**, she always had a false humility and duplicity.

**Twenty-five**, my enemies favored her while hating me - [Frank Eden](#), [Al and Kay Wheeler](#), [Clarence Arnoldussen](#), and so many others.

**Twenty-six**, her family was “converted to Christ” through her, but their conversions were spurious, every one of them - father, mother, and brother. Would one not call these “tares,” that which the enemy has sown?

**Twenty-seven**, she more than once viciously snarled, “Yeah, you want me to be this meek, submissive wife, groveling at your feet!” The voice of a devil. I wanted no such thing - the very thought was unbearable.

**Twenty-eight**, these are the possible names of devils, the characteristics of which I had seen in Marilyn: bitterness, fear, control, false prophet, adultery, stubbornness, whoredoms, false humility, false piety, rebellion, and pride, to name some.

**Twenty-nine**, Marilyn was very skilled at twisting things and being duplicitous. She was full of “escape,” constantly using evasion tactics.

**Thirty**, she committed many general evils, like worshipping Sean, denying my headship, arguing, snarling, being defensive, and having fears of all kinds.

**Thirty-one**, *“two entities vying for power”*? I received these words on a walk I took after a major battle with her, having asked the Lord why we were fighting.

### **Particle - Declaring Marilyn’s Spiritual Condition**

I called for everyone to gather at the garden shop and declared to them what I had received on Marilyn on Sunday night. Surprisingly, she consented to be prayed for. I then had her sit down, and I prayed for her, as a daughter of the Lord, laying my right hand on her head. I told Marilyn she had devils and needed healing and deliverance. I addressed the enemy, whoever and however many were in her. She was testy, grudging, despising me. Sean was with her in heart. There were no signs of anything happening, but I accepted that all was done.

To Trevor, I said, “You need to wake up from your sleep and come out of hiding” (he had been passive). After praying for Marilyn, I asked him if he had anything. He was reminded of the dreams [Paul Cohen](#) and [Bob Gregson](#) had, wherein Marilyn and I were leading a godly little girl.

Mark was reminded that we needed to shout the praises of God. Lois was reminded of us as an army standing in a line against the enemy and said that the enemy was finished. I asked Sean for nothing, knowing there was nothing but enmity.

When done praying for Marilyn, she asked if I was done, put the chair back in its place, and walked away from me. She had a jacket for Jonathan for me to take home. She threw it at me, being cold, resentful, and unforgiving. All I could say was, "Praise the Lord," and I left. The Bensons and I realized that we were to literally shout praises unto God, though we didn't seem to do it.

If we had shouted God's praises, would Marilyn have changed there and then?

### Particle - Aspects of a Coming New Life

"The Lord is bringing us into a new life. In it, there is no room for self-consciousness, stuffiness, 'self-respect,' conservatism, inhibition, apology, doubt, or fear. Fear of man has no place. Respect of the world is not the issue. Satan is to be ousted. He is finished and the territory he has usurped and held all this time is to be taken from him. How? We believe and obey the Lord by putting away all doubts and fears, praising Him and shouting the deliverance of the Lord. He has given us the keys to victory and we must see to it that we use them."

### Particle - Lois' Prophecy: Leave It to God Now

Marilyn reiterated her position, declaring she stood firm. I said nothing. Lois now said for the second time, *"You have done all that is required of you and all that you can do. You must leave it in the Lord's hands. It's all up to Him now."* She told me she received this twice to give to me.

### Particle - Taking Things for Granted

The essence of sin is to take what we have for granted. Lord, I ask You to forgive me for taking for granted my wife, my son, Your sacrifice on the cross, Your vocation on my life, all Your provisions of every kind, Your guidance and protection, all Your servants, my health, the health and wellbeing of my family, a peaceful neighborhood and country. The list is infinite.

I have taken You for granted, Lord, is what it boils down to. Forgive me, Lord! But more importantly, now grant Your servant (and not only Your servant, but your *son* and *heir* to all that You have and even *are*) to worship, adore, and praise You. Grant that I should live a life of praise and thanksgiving unto You.

### Particle - A Promise of Calling

I woke up from a nap on the afternoon of March 31, 2000 with these thoughts: "It would be so nice if something were to come along and begin a new life for me, doing something I enjoy, something purposeful, enjoyable, like a dream come true. I've lived lonely and have felt so useless and empty."

I received that I would be spoken to and would know when the time came as to what I should be doing. I had thought of various good works I could head out to do. I recalled a [prophecy](#) back in



1984 in Bernalillo, wherein the Lord said, *"You'll be hurried and harried, but keep the peace. You will know beyond the shadow of a doubt what to do because you'll be shown clearly"* (words to that effect).

What I received today witnessed with Lois. She said I was to wait on the Lord and that these things coming indicated that I was going to be given something. She added that I had been in preparation, my heart now changed, and that I would be seeing and reacting to people and things quite differently from before.

### Particle - War Continues with Marilyn

Marilyn directly, emphatically declared that I was not her head. She then praised the Lord. I called her a whore, an adulteress, saying she was in black faith, being faithful to Satan. I said it was in vain that she praised the Lord with her lips. I said, "The hypocrisy and contradiction take away my breath! It's amazing how you can come directly against the Word of God and stand declaring your faith and righteousness!

"The Word of God says, **'God is the head of Christ, Christ the head of the man, and man the head of the woman.'** You stand, boldly declaring I'm not your head, you have publicly chosen another man as your husband, making null and void the Word of God and His Law, and then you praise the Lord? Furthermore, you pontificate to me about how I should believe, be thankful, and recognize that the Lord is doing all these things."

I said, "It's not up to a harlot to preach to me, and I **am** believing and thanking the Lord!"

### Particle - Past Prophecy Preserved for the Present

I then went downstairs to pray and begged God to give me a Word. This was April 2, 2000. I took a Bible from the bookshelf and in it I found an [old prophecy](#). The date of the prophecy was October 31, 1991. I had burned all old prophecies and this one remained in a Bible I chose of 60 or more Bibles, minutes after I prayed for a Word from the Lord. Was this an insignificant coincidence? I read the prophecy and found it applied to my circumstances. I was thankful.

### **The Word of the Lord to Victor (found April 2, 2000)**

*"I have given you power, rushing fiery power that will destroy your adversaries on the left hand and on the right, before and behind, above and beneath, without and within. You will rule over the nations with a rod of iron and as vessels of a potter smash them to pieces and scatter the powder to the winds. My vehemence will be manifest in you, nothing thwarting it. Mouths offending and opposing I will shut and they shall not be opened.*

*You are My chosen vessel, and I will not tolerate any to touch you any more than the apple of My eye. They have all poked their fingers at My face and have fingered their noses at Me. They have all railed and vomited on Me and on you because of Me. No longer will they be tolerated and permitted to do so.*

*You speak, My son, and fear nothing. They will proceed no further as they have done. Only do not do as do they in man's railing and wrath. Speak the truth by My Spirit in the spirit of righteousness and temperance, and I will surely see to the results that they are entirely in your favor and in the favor of all those who stand with you and whose interests you represent.*

*It's here, My son, it is here! The time for victory is here. I will turn to shame the heads of those who despise you and they will turn or I'll break their necks. They will swallow their poison. They will be forced to revere you or die. Those who resent you can no longer do so without death to themselves. This is the beginning of your partaking of the heritage of the saints, as you have not known it before, which the Lord your God has granted. Amen.*

*Do as you please with your investment money. It does not matter. If it was important that you should have more you would have more, and so will it be in the days ahead."*

October 31, 1991  
Moon River

**Note:** On this day of March 31, 2015, I was reviewing this Theo-auto Part, having just finished reading that prophecy. We then held a Bible reading with Sara and Jeannie. We had been reading Psalms and resumed at ***Psalm 35***. It was marvellously in tune with the prophecy. Remarkable.

***Who says there is no God?***

#### **Particle - Marilyn Is like Quebec with Canada**

I told Marilyn she was in adultery, though she wasn't in sexual, physical conduct with anyone. Mentally and spiritually, she and Sean were guilty, yet Marilyn wouldn't make a clean break from me. I likened her attitude towards me to that of the Quebec separatists towards the Dominion of Canada. They wish to have their cake and eat it, too.

They want all the benefits of a province of Canada - the federal grants, trade benefits, international advantages, Canada's currency - yet they want independence in everything - finances, education, immigration, medicare, politics, language, associations with other nations, and more. They want all the benefits of marriage without the responsibilities.

#### **Particle - The Two Farmers of THE Dream**

On April 4<sup>th</sup>, Marilyn spoke to Clarence Halma and John Schussler back-to-back on the phone, not having heard from either one in a long time. These are the two farmers I [had told](#) in 1996 that I was being taken. I believe they were the two men I saw in the [first dream](#) I had in 1972.

#### **Particle - The End Approaches**

Mark came to me, very frustrated with Sean's hypocrisy, contradiction, and arrogance, as well as the way Sean and Marilyn related to each other. All was beginning to surface, and people were taking their positions.

On April 5<sup>th</sup>, I served Marilyn notice that Sean's time was about up. She was upset. I wondered if I wasn't stepping out of line, failing as a peacemaker. Then I thought of Solomon who, upon ascending the throne of Israel, had potential enemies eliminated - his half-brother, Adonijah, the general, Joab, the priest, Abiathar, and eventually one from Saul's house, Shimei, who had cursed Solomon's father, King David.

What a start for peace! How is it Solomon did these violent things in righteousness when his very name means "peace" and his reign was established as one of peace, the greatest and most glorious period Israel had ever known in all its history under kings? For one thing, he followed his wise father David's advice. One must eliminate the enemy for there to be peace. As it says:

***"Cast out the scorner, and fighting shall go out; yes, quarrels and shame shall cease"***  
**(Proverbs 22:10 MKJV).**

Marilyn was as slippery as a slimy pike, confounded and contradictory in almost all she said. She was without the Law of God for a foundation. Many times have I said, "I wish I had taped our conversation because she says so many things, then denies them or denies their meaning." Yet, if I had presence of mind, I was able to prove her error, though she still remained unrepentant.

### Particle - Jonathan's Wisdom and Will

Jonathan had a Word (prophecy) for me on April 5, 2000. "Dad," he said, *"you have to tell Sean to go."* When I told him (wisely or not) the possible consequences - Marilyn leaving with Sean - he cried and cried, but remained steadfast in his Word that I needed to expel Sean. I was amazed at his courage. It wasn't as though he didn't love his mother - he surely did; I have envied their close relationship. He had the wisdom from God and integrity to go with what God gave him. There was no other explanation.

There are eighty-eight days between the time I delivered the vision of Sean to this prophecy of Sean to go. Jonathan spoke these words **88 days** after my [vision](#) of Sean dying was delivered to all on January 7<sup>th</sup>, and on the **40<sup>th</sup>** day after I met the [angel](#) on February 25<sup>th</sup> in Coaldale.

Jonathan called on the 6<sup>th</sup> to ask me if he should ask Marilyn to mention his prophecy to Sean. I said "No." I thought he should leave it for now. Likely, I would be the one to tell them. Was I holding back? Should I not have been following through immediately on the Word from the Lord by Jonathan? Would there be trouble if I didn't act promptly?

He pressed me in the next few days on several occasions that his prophecy of casting Sean out was from the Lord and to be performed shortly, not urgently, but soon. Lois felt the same way.

### Particle - A Match Made in Heaven

One morning I saw that God had matched up one who had an enormous problem with being or appearing wrong (Marilyn) with someone who was a strong critic, always faulting and pointing out wrongs (me). To the flesh, no worse match could be made; to God, no better. One would balance the other.

### Particle - Three Agree on Some Matters

Talking to Mark and Lois, I red them the pages of notes on the [angel](#) I met. We had been receiving like things:

**One**, Marilyn and Sean were increasing in the conviction of their beliefs and direction by a quantum leap.

**Two**, Sean must be given the rope to hang both himself and Marilyn.

**Three**, Jonathan's prophecy was of God, but the timing is yet to be determined.

**Four**, to eyes that see, the Truth is there, perfect and obvious. There is no cause for doubt.

**Five**, we would know them by their fruits, not by their words. Sean writes off all that I say, do, believe, and am, and Marilyn with him. It is treason and witchcraft. They have pronounced death on me by the prophecy.

**Six**, where did it stop being that I was from the Lord? Has the Lord said so? No. Seeing that I am from the Lord, how could they prevail or escape consequences?

**Seven**, Lois received that we are to avoid strife and speak only that which we are given to speak. At the same time, I received that we were to be wise as serpents and harmless as doves.

### **Particle - The Lord's Word on Marilyn**

Marilyn and I had another battle. She was very upset because I wasn't willing to confide in her any longer. Jonathan and I then went for a hike and I prayed with Jonathan, asking the Lord to destroy me if I was in the wrong. Within minutes, an answer came.

The Lord said *Marilyn was not hearing from Him; she had cut herself off from Him in that she had cut herself off from me; she was not rejecting me or fighting me as I have been assuming and taking somewhat personally, but the Lord; she was fighting Him. Finally, in her fight against Him, she could/would receive nothing from me but would resist it all, distorting, avoiding, perverting, and resisting. She was full of darkness, lies, and accusations.*

### **Particle - Jonathan's Vision Revelation on All at Farm**

They were having problems with a ewe lambing, so Jonathan and I prayed. "Dad," he said, "I just had a picture of the situation. Aunt Lois and Mark were praising the Lord, Trevor was just standing by, and Sean was saying, 'We don't have time for praising the Lord - there are other things to do.' Dad, all this was hidden. They are all doing these things inside." I took this to be revelation from the Lord.

In the night, it came to me that the ewe needed a calcium shot. I found out in the morning that this was exactly what they gave her, and she was better.

### **Particle - Confronting Trevor**

I addressed Trevor on his stance toward me. He was quite hard and resisting, but I unexpectedly blessed him with God's mercy. He resisted, but it was done and the fruit would come forth soon. He did say that he didn't believe Marilyn's prophecy, and he believed what I had to say in the letters to them.

The word “creepy” came to me about Trevor - he had turned into a zombie. On April 13<sup>th</sup> at 4:20 AM, it came to me that he had handed his will over to Sean.

### Particle - Sean, Marilyn, and Leviticus 20:10-11

**“And a man who commits adultery with a man’s wife, who commits adultery with his neighbor’s wife, the adulterer and the adulteress shall surely be put to death. And the man who lies with his father’s wife has uncovered his father’s nakedness. Both of them shall surely be put to death. Their blood shall be on them” (Leviticus 20:10-11 MKJV).**

Sean has committed adultery with a man’s wife, and he has also committed spiritual adultery with his father’s wife, in that he was my son in the faith. The Bible says both shall die. I had the [vision](#) of Sean dying, and [Kumiko Konoshita](#), a woman in Japan Mark had met and whom we corresponded with, believed Marilyn was going to die.

### Particle - Dorothy Frame Takes Her Stand

[Dorothy Frame](#) was breaking down physically and mentally. Her daughter, Pat, gave us notice that she didn’t want our involvement because of the letter I had handed Dorothy about her sins and those of her daughters, urging them that only the Lord could help them. We received reports from her caregivers that Dorothy was irrational and abusive.

### Particle - Jonathan’s Vision: Travel on Hilly Terrain

Jonathan had a vision on April 10, 2000 at “5 to 12,” he said. “How do you know it was a vision?” I asked him. He said it wouldn’t go away and, at the time he had it, he thought it was simply a mind’s picture, but now he knew he had a vision:

He was facing **south** (this he emphasized), coming out of some bush, which had been thick and which he had been “hacking his way through.” Coming into a clearing (all this on a hill), he viewed hills on the left and on the right. Before him and down below was a lake, and behind the lake more hills. On those hills he saw both green and brown patches of terrain. The sun was neither high nor low in the sky and to the right of his focus, which suggested later afternoon.

I asked Jonathan if he had any thoughts on it, and all he could say was that he felt his prophecy of needing to kick Sean out was about to happen or should be happening. Though I had told him that his mother would likely leave if I kicked Sean out, and he wept bitterly at the thought, he remained firm.

## **Page 12**

### Particle - Halting in Obedience

Jonathan had spoken the Word of the Lord to me, saying that I needed to send Sean away, and I wasn’t obeying. Another ewe was having difficulty lambing, and there was division as to what needed to be done. Marilyn determined that others weren’t taking responsibility so she decided to do so, although Sean’s vote was to get a vet.

She decided not to call the vet, but to try and deal with the situation themselves, with neighbor Rose Slingerland’s help (the Slingerlands had experience with sheep). Marilyn decided to use labor-inducing drugs, which was contrary to our philosophy of organic and natural management.

Lois called me to inform me of what happened. Triplets were involved. The first lamb that came died, and the next two were desperately tangled in the mother. We lost the lambs and the ewe. Lois also talked about our whole situation.

I had always viewed these tragedies as reflections and results of a lack in relationship to God. I wasn't speaking what I needed to speak. I wasn't making the move to evict Sean, afraid that the farm might fall apart if he left, seeing that he was controlling everything and that Marilyn was helping while he was there. I believed she wouldn't tolerate kicking him out and would therefore leave with him or wash her hands of any responsibility towards the farm. Besides, she might take Jonathan with her if she left. I was holding back obedience to God, preserving myself, and the consequences were gathering.

### **Particle - Sean Informed of Jonathan's Prophecy**

It was on Day 1200 since the prophecy that I had the [vision](#) of Sean dying. It was on Day 1245 that Sean [declared](#) Marilyn to be his wife. It was on Day 1255 that Sean got [very angry](#) with me, telling me I was speaking "crap" to Trevor. On Day 1289, Jonathan had the [prophecy](#) that Sean had to go. On Day 1295 (April 11<sup>th</sup>), I told Sean of Jonathan's prophecy concerning him. This was **88 days** after the vision of Sean's death, **50 days** after his claiming Marilyn, and **40 days** after he got angry with me. None of this or its timing was planned.

On April 12<sup>th</sup>, I told Sean he had been treacherous with me, that he was a transgressor, a meddler, and an adulterer. Lois told me Sean went after her the night before, angry with her for calling me, demanding to know the substance of our conversation. Lois wouldn't tell him, and she told me he didn't believe anything I said.

Today, I was somewhat miserable and battling. I struggled with Sean's presumption and impudence, in spite of the fact I confronted him on his sins and told him I was considering asking him to leave. I struggled with Marilyn's siding with him and my concern that all will come to naught if I expelled him.

**"Lord, help! Thank You for bringing me to this Day of judgment and temptation. Thank You for Your deliverance from the 'evil one,' that one within."**

### **Particle - Marilyn the Source of Evil Control**

I confessed to Trevor that Sean and his doings were my responsibility. He was controlling everything because he got it from me. Then I realized that this wasn't true. Marilyn had been the controlling one. Before I met her, I wasn't one to control any more than many others. While I was an unbeliever, after believing and going to the Alliance Church, and as a Baptist, I was not one trying to control anyone.

But when we got married, Marilyn established control. She was controlling everything at Faith Baptist Church. Les and Penny Mills, Gene Knorr, and Mark Ogden saw it, enemies though they were. Rob and Corinne Hepher saw it, though I doubt these latter traced it to her. Sean was placing his bets on her, believing she would decide the outcome of things at the farm.

Marilyn took control of me and used me to control others. I was her axe man whenever she disagreed with somebody - the neighbors at Moon River, Archie and Cathie, Kerri, the Bensons, the Municipal District of Willow Creek, the administration for our area. She was bitterness incarnate,



ever chafing privately, but always wearing a smile and speaking smooth words publicly, as though she was the sweetest person on earth. She poisoned Sean against me and the Lord. Sean willingly ate her dung. She destroyed him.

I recalled the [vision](#) I had January 1, 1998, wherein the Lord was delivering me from reaching into the toilet. I saw a woman's severed forearm laying on the floor. I had also eaten her dung, but now my deliverance from her power was here. The day of that vision was 23 years from the day we were [baptized in the Spirit](#) - 8400 days in all - 1200 X 7 or 700 X 12 - rest and rulership.

**"I set my heart to know, and to search, and to seek out wisdom, and the reason of things, and to know the wickedness of folly, even of foolishness and madness; and I find more bitter than death the woman whose heart is snares and nets, and her hands like bands. Whoever pleases God shall escape from her, but the sinner shall be taken by her" (Ecclesiastes 7:25-26 MKJV).**

I learned the wickedness of folly, of foolishness and madness. God was now delivering and has delivered me. He has cleansed me of being defiled by a woman:

**"These are those who were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are those who follow the Lamb wherever He goes. These were redeemed from among men, as a firstfruit to God and to the Lamb" (Revelation 14:4 MKJV).**

In this life, once virginity is lost, it can never be regained. Not so with the Lord. He is the Resurrection.

Having heard in 1996 that Marilyn was the [second Eve](#), I now understood that, as the woman led the man away from God, through the power of the serpent (Eve did it with Adam, and Marilyn did it with me), now she must repent and return to the man, who has returned to God.

This is the **Great Reversal of the Fall**, the **Neutralization of the Original Sin**.

Thus shall woman be saved. She must repent of believing and following the serpent. Marilyn must renounce Sean and return to her husband, provided, of course, that the husband has turned from her to the Lord. There is no other way.

Marilyn's [dream](#) of the stranger casting a spell on us and making himself comfortable with us was not of Paul, as she assumed and asserted, but of Sean, as I suspected. She must command him to leave, renouncing her devotion to, and faith in, him.

### **Particle - Dream: Lord Near and Ready**

In the night of April 14-15, 2000, I had a dream wherein the coming of the Lord was on the very edge of both time and space. He was above a full, dark low cloud ceiling. The sky had a rift in it from one side to the other, like a narrow furrow in a plowed field. In that rift was a silver-colored tinsel rope of the kind we strung on Christmas trees years ago (maybe some still do). There was no light but darkness in that rift.

Two persons, a man and a woman, normally but nicely dressed, descended in a swirling pillar of cloud. I saw the cloud come from above but its landing was obscured by a crowd of people. Then these two persons came forth, the pillar cloud returned upward, and it was not until all was done that I realized what happened.

In some anxiety, I approached these persons and laid my right hand on their chests, enquiring of them. I only saw the woman; the man was there but somehow obscure or invisible, and yet he wasn't. They told me that the Lord was just above the cloud, near and ready to make Himself known. They didn't seem to have anything special for me - I was only one of the multitudes, although they seemed a little hesitant of me or somehow cognizant of my shortfall with the Lord.

It was like I was nobody with the Lord, quite in contrast to my original dream and many prophecies that have come from my own mouth and that of others. I almost expected, or did expect, some displeasure from the Lord when He descended, at least that I would be ignored.

After all this, I was crying out to Him and weeping. It seemed that I was genuinely, physically weeping in my sleep as well as in the dream, though there were no tears. When I awoke, I was reminded of two things: **one**, I mustn't doubt the past and what has happened, as though God was never there and I did my own thing; **two**, these sessions of darkness into which I get submerged are followed by revelations/events/developments.

"Something is about to go down," as they say. Therefore, this time, I will thank and praise Him, rather than grovel and grope in this battle. Indeed, before the darkness came, I was warned that it would come, that I should praise the Lord, and that on the other side of the blackness was a victory.

Lois called and said two things - that she was feeling something occurring with me and that things were taking a turn for the better with Trevor.

### **Particle - God Does Not Sleep**

To demonstrate His sovereignty in all things, both Heavenly and earthly, God did something peculiar for me. For the first time in many years, I was trying to recall the name of the Dutch man who fell asleep for many years. Within the hour, I turned on the TV to watch *Double Exposure*. They had a commercial using the name... Rip Van Winkle.

### **Particle - Television, Man's and God's Righteousness**

*Double Exposure* could have some racy content, being quite explicit and crude on sexual matters. For that reason, I refrained from watching it, though I enjoyed some of their cleverness and humor in lip-synching news clips and such.

That day, I decided to watch it and there came the mentioned coincidence. This sort of thing has occurred repeatedly with TV (which, in and of itself, I have doubted watching). I can only conclude that the Lord is saying to me, *"Victor, I am over all; it is not your righteousness; I am keeping you; don't doubt or fear; you'll be found doing what is ordained; you are not to judge by the appearance."*

### **Particle - The Day the Son Seeks the Father's Pleasure**

I told Jonathan that I longed for the day when he would be glad to see me for me and when he would enter into my interests and desires. Then I realized the parallel to the Heavenly Father. I have wanted this, that, and the other from Him. By Jonathan, I can begin to appreciate that my Father would like for me to seek Him for Him, His interests and desires.

“Yes, Father, that is what I want. Let me put my childish things away, far away, forever. Grant me, Lord, to delight in You and in doing Your will.”

### **Particle - A Lie and the Consequence**

I decided to take Jonathan to see *Stuart Little* at the theater on April 19<sup>th</sup>. Because we eat organic, we smuggled in our own treats. However, the manager approached me, saying they didn't allow outside food. I told him we brought our own because of health reasons (which was true, in letter), knowing I might lead him to believe Jonathan and/or I had health problems.

He permitted us, but within minutes, the Lord spoke to me, saying, *“Because you said you had health problems, therefore you will now have them.”* Was I hearing from Him? In 30 days, I would find out. (This reminded me of the [ice cream bar episode](#) in 1981.)

Struggling, I asked for the manager after the movie and confessed my deception, telling him that our intention and approach was preventative and not curative, that I was misleading in the way I expressed myself to him. He was okay with it and understanding. Really, what could he say? He also seemed to know somewhat about foods and their controversies, such as with aspartame.

When confessing these things to Lois and Mark, they didn't think that there was a problem or that the Lord spoke to me. However, Lois said the thought had come to her about what I would say if I was asked (we knew beforehand that the theater didn't allow outside food). She said she thought she would say, “Get decent food here and we wouldn't bring in our own” (which would be speaking the truth for good). Why did Lois have that thought almost simultaneously with the event?

The next morning, I awoke troubled about everything - the past, present, future, earthly and Heavenly matters, all my doings - everything. All these things troubled me, but a truth dawned on me while I was asking the Lord about the theater event and all things in general:

“We get into trouble within when we think we are in control of anything, past, present, or future. We're never in control of anything, but when we begin to blame ourselves and regret the past and how we did things, truly we're assuming we were in control of our lives. We aren't God; it's not our righteousness and never was. He will do what He will do.”

Peace came. I must praise the Lord.

### **Particle - Not Another Year of Loneliness and Weeding**

In the night, I thought, “I can't bear the thought of another summer of being alone, subject to the hours of weeding dandelions in the lawn, and for what? Vanity!” But I heard, *“It won't be. It will be different this year.”* I brushed the thoughts aside, thinking I was trying to console myself, fighting the reality and unpleasant prospect. I mentioned it to Lois. She went on with her duties and received that, indeed, it would be as I heard. Furthermore, I heard that the change would not be reversed.

### **Particle - Many People to Come**

Trevor dreamt that Paul and Kerri would return, and I saw that many people would be coming to the farm and that it would be busy. It is the Lord's work.

## Particle - Divisional Changes

I found myself talking with Lois and Mark, who often had the same thoughts independently of me, especially Lois, which served as confirmations for me and for her. Marilyn was upset because we didn't have that relationship now, and I couldn't confide in her. There was no fellowship.

As I was talking on the phone, Marilyn spoke, saying she heard, "*The truth will prevail.*" What she didn't know is that we were saying it was wrong for us to speak against her and Sean in a wrongful spirit or with evil motive, no matter how wrong they were.

"Yes, the Truth will prevail, and when He does, there will be great shamefacedness with Marilyn and Sean. They are so convinced they are right, but they are in great evil."

## Particle - Expectations of Archie's Return

Lois, Mark, and I had been expecting that Archie would return some day. If he did, I said, he would be in charge, and if any should disagree, we would say, "Archie stays; you go." Lois and Mark heartily agreed.

When Marilyn first prophesied that I would be dying, Archie disagreed, saying the prophecy was false. I also recalled that one day in 1996, Archie was crying. I said to him, "Archie, everything is going to be okay." The following years would make a liar of me.

## Particle - Phinehas, Zimri, and Cozbi

As I read in Numbers 25 of the Israelite fornicating with a Midianitish woman and how Phinehas took a javelin and ran it through both of them at once, it occurred to me that Marilyn and Sean, being in fornication, would die for their sin. I then looked in *Strong's Concordance* to find the meanings of the names involved. I was somewhat taken aback.

The woman's name was Cozbi (#'s 3579, 3576-78, 3580), which means "false; to lie, to deceive, fall, be found a liar, be in vain; falsehood, untruth, idol...."

I said that Marilyn's prophecy was false. Lois had fasted and heard that Marilyn's prophecy was a lie and that she was a false prophetess. Kumiko received that Marilyn would die. I had my vision of Sean dying.

The man's name was Zimri (#'s 2174, 2167, 2168-73), which means "musical [Sean majored in music at University], to trim, prune [he was sent to prune or to deal with us, as the Lord said], striking with the fingers [Marilyn's [dream](#) of the man casting a spell?]; stand up, bristle, tremble, shaggy, rough, to prick, thorny [he was so hard, as cold as ice], double fleece, fleeciness [yet he could be so endearing, nice and friendly], foliage [as in hiding/camouflage; again, the spell in Marilyn's dream of the stranger in our midst?]

Marilyn and Sean were both very frustrated with Mark, who, for some reason, always had a problem with the prophecy and their relationship, and rightly so. Each of us believed the prophecy at one time or another and totally succumbed to the idea of Marilyn and Sean's romance. But not Mark, not totally. They would often be quite angry with him, saying he wasn't believing, only reasoning, and that he should put his reasoning away.

What does Phinehas mean? It means “mouth of the serpent.” The serpent was known for his reasoning powers:

“Now the serpent was more subtle than any animal of the field which the LORD God had made. He said to the woman, ‘Has God really said, “You shall not eat of any tree of the garden?”’” (Genesis 3:1 HNV)

Phinehas chose a very physical or carnal way to deal with the offending couple. He took a javelin to them. For that, the plague among the Israelites was stopped and God blessed Phinehas and his future generations for it. Reasoning can be carnal and deadly:

**“For to be carnally minded is death, but to be spiritually minded is life and peace” (Romans 8:6 MKJV).**

Mark may have reasoned, or his spiritual instincts were working, but it worked for him and it worked for us, not that I advocate carnal reasoning (there is the good and the bad). Sean didn’t want Mark to reason, yet Sean always reasoned. It was fine for him and fine for others if they reasoned as he did, but not when the reasoning didn’t suit him. Reasoning or not, Mark was often of great encouragement to me during this time, agreeing with those things that Lois and I were receiving.

God said that if the Israelites were to join themselves to the heathen, they would become like them and worship their gods. Cozbi was a Midianitish woman. “Midian” (Strong’s #’s 4079, 4080, 4066, 1777) means “brawling, contention, strife, discord; to rule, judge, strive, contend....”

Marilyn turned into a vicious brawler with me and had turned Sean against me. Both had decided to rule all of us and to judge all things as to whether they were right or wrong, good or bad, and they destroyed everything. This spring we lost a ewe and six lambs so far, a high rate of 30%. Other things were also going wrong at the farm, and Marilyn blamed me for the sheep loss and other problems.

### **Particle - Two Thoughts Confirmed by Three Persons**

Independently of one another, yet simultaneously, Lois, Mark, and I had two same thoughts. As I was wondering if I was the cause of the problems, I suddenly thought, “Hey! Why am I feeling guilty? Marilyn and Sean are in adultery, smugly wiping their faces, brazen in their ways, and I think the sin lies with me?” Lois and Mark had the same thought.

The second thought we received was that I was prepared to examine and see if the blame rested with me. Marilyn and Sean had no conscience or question about themselves at all. They saw themselves as righteous, period. Thus was the Lord with us, giving two or three witnesses as to the truth and justice of this matter.

### **Particle - An Answer for Les Mills**

For some reason, I decided to call [Les Mills](#). He was very depressed and disgruntled at the Lord. They had sold their ranch near Cardston and were looking for another farm property. He had previously sought my direction on the matter, and I had nothing to give him. In this call now, I had things to tell him, but I wasn’t getting anywhere, so after the phone call, I asked the Lord to show me what was needed for Les. I received that he needed to bring an offering of his ranch sale to me.

I thought, “He won’t believe that. I don’t want to tell anyone that. Surely, he will tell me I’m money-grubbing. Besides, why do I want his money? I don’t need it.”

It wasn’t a matter of my need, however, but his. Les had to give; he had to commit. He had confessed me as a man of God, [saying to me](#), “**Blessed is he that comes in the Name of the Lord,**” which reminded me of the same thing happening with [Mike Trepanier](#) in 1980, and which [went nowhere](#).

Les had sought my counsel with his lips, and now it was time to put his money where his mouth was. He had been wandering for about a year, not knowing what to do or where to go after selling his property. Now I knew what he needed to do and if he did it, he would receive directions and the blessing of the Lord. As it stood, he was seeking a prophet and God’s counsel for earthly gain. He needed to seek the Kingdom of God and His righteousness, whereby all these other things would be added to him.

Not telling Lois what came to me, I called her and told her about the conversation I had with Les. Lois received that Les needed to bring an offering. Confirmation again. I told her that is what I received, yet I was balking.

I called Les and told him what he needed to do. I also told him that the authors he was reading - Eby, Roach, and others - were giving theory but no practical, and that the practical was what it was all about. The secret was in the doing, not the knowing; in the life, not the knowledge.

Les received nothing of what I said, just as I expected. I also expected that they would guffaw at what I said among themselves. So it was.

On May 6<sup>th</sup>, I decided to call him again. I had composed another letter for him. He soon showed up at the door without notice. Les was worse than when we had last talked, so down he was. We spent nearly 6 hours talking and he unburdened himself, though he didn’t change. I reiterated the Lord’s requirement of an offering from his estate. I also prayed for his deliverance and healing. We didn’t get into the letter - he was in no shape for it.

In essence, Les blamed God for his condition and circumstances and wouldn’t repent of it. I detailed a letter to him days later, expressing that which the Lord had shown me concerning him. He needed to repent before the Lord would do anything more for him. The onus was on him, not the Lord.

### **Particle - Lois’ Vision: Marilyn and Sean Scolding**

On April 30, 2000, Lois had a “picture” of Marilyn sitting on Sean’s lap, while the two of them were shaking their fingers, scolding the Bensons and me.

### **Particle - Unconditional Forgiveness for Mother**

On May 6<sup>th</sup>, I called my mother to express unconditional forgiveness to her, no matter her stance, whether she was repentant or not. I expected that she would think I was the offending one and in need of forgiveness. We talked for over an hour, she asked for a picture of Jonathan, and we sent it to her. To me she showed no emotion or commitment of any kind.



She had never seen Jonathan, and I had never involved her with him at any time, except to let him talk to her on the phone when she called, which he did, though there was little to talk about. She had sent some Christmas and birthday gifts, which we accepted and thanked her for, though she knew we didn't observe those occasions.

### Particle - Message to Sean Before All

On the morning of May 7<sup>th</sup>, I called the farm and, on speaker phone, said to Sean, "You are an enemy of all that is good, honest, decent, pure, holy, godly, and true." It was all I said, and I left it. I was hoping Lois would sign off the call, which she did. Minutes later, after I left the house, Marilyn called Sean. When I returned, I asked her who she was talking to and who called whom.

I then said that the words Marilyn had [once](#) said to me, when I called to encourage Lois, applied to her, which were "strengthening the hands of the wicked." I told her that the words I had just spoken to Sean also applied to her. She defiantly replied, "Okay," thus fulfilling Proverbs 30:20: **"Such is the way of an adulterous woman; she eats, and wipes her mouth, and says, 'I have done no evil.'"**

### Particle - My Position in Jesus Christ

One day, with sure knowledge, conviction, and power, I said to Mark, "I am the resurrection and the life." These were words that came to me with recognition of my position and power in the Lord. I had now entered into the Feast of Tabernacles, having been raised from the dead by the power and will of God and made one with the Lord, even as He had prayed (John 17).

We experience death at repentance, burial when baptized in the Holy Spirit, and resurrection when entering rest. This third and last step is the overcoming, which Jesus promised, as recorded in the Revelations to the seven churches. I am the victory of God. I said to Mark, "Not only do I have the victory, I **am** the victory." This is that "Second Coming of the Lord," the victory He has wrought in those who have endured to the end.

### Particle - Desire for Reconciliation with All

I had called my mother. I talked to my neighbors. I was praying for Marilyn. There was in me a desire, if not zeal, for reconciliation and peace with all people. At Jonathan's suggestion, I decided to talk to [Steve and Marquise Harris](#) and ask their forgiveness for the way I had been as a hardhearted, inconsiderate person. Yes, [Marquise](#) had done me wrong, but I didn't care.

They were both very happy, Marquise gave me a hug, crying, and Steve decided to give me a book, *The Jesus I Never Knew* by Philip Yancey. I read the book and found it to be nothing more than sentimental religious trash, fanciful notions of God and His will and ways. I wanted to talk to Steve about it, but it never happened. Steve wasn't at all interested in entering reality.

### Particle - More on My Angelic Visitor

The victory and power I was experiencing in recent weeks seemed to stem back to the visitation of the [angel](#) on February 25<sup>th</sup>. Today, on May 10<sup>th</sup> (14 days later), more came to me of that momentous occasion. In essence, the person was saying, *"I'm here on mission on your behalf, to do your work for you. You won't have to do anything – I'll handle it."*

I am to rest. I'm not the motor or pump; I'm not the water; I am but a passive conduit. God is the Motor and Pump, and His Spirit of Truth and Love is the Living Water. Through me He is pouring out His Spirit upon the earth.

### Particle - Not to Share with Marilyn

I struggled with whether I should be sharing with Marilyn. She resented my not confiding in her. I had incurred vexation and damage often, and she took what I shared and gave it to Sean or used it to bolster her position. I couldn't do it. Lois received that when I said to Marilyn, "The Lord rebuke you," He was doing so by no longer imparting to her. One day, out of pity, I shared with her, and it was despised - twice it happened. I said, "Why do I do it?"

### Particle - If Sean Goes, All Goes?

More and more, whether rightly or wrongly, I was inclined to cast Sean out. If he went, Marilyn said she would go with him. If they went, the business would go. If the business went, the farm would go. I didn't see any reason to keep anything.

### Particle - Victory in Consequence

On April 19, 2000, I [lied to the theater](#) about our snacks, heard words of rebuke as a consequence, and wondered if the words were from the Lord. On May 13<sup>th</sup>, 24 days later, I realized the words were from the Lord. In a strange and unusual way, my [old leg injury](#) began bothering me soon after, causing me to realize that all these years, since 1971, the Lord had been keeping my leg. Indeed, my illness-free life was being taken from me for lying, just as He said.

I also began to realize that victory was not just a momentary event, as in a battle won, but something sustained indefinitely. In order for there to be a constant victory, evil or opposition must be present.

Thankfully and interestingly, I found myself praising God now, in spite of my fall, my sin. At one time, I would have been so down, as with the [ice cream bar incident](#) and so many others. Now I saw that, one, it wasn't my righteousness; two, the Lord required me to serve Him with my infirmities; and three, victory was only meaningful in the presence of infirmity.... **"You prepare a table for me in the presence of my enemies."**

### Particle - My Attitude or Perspective on Offerings Brought

I now recognized that I not only didn't want Les' offering, I despised it. I recalled the [vision](#) I had when offering all my possessions to the Lord. The vision showed I had offered garbage and all vile things on an altar.

I saw that an offering or tithe is simply a statement saying, "I'm willing to part with the physical in order to enjoy a relationship with God." The money itself is no more valuable to God than the ink to sign a contract. Yet we as signers are so prone to place value on the ink rather than the contract, and we expect God to be impressed. The fact is we're using His pen and ink of faith to sign.

### Particle - Informing Les and Penny of My Vicarious Benefit to Them

Again, I called Les and Penny. I told Les that my life was taken and laid down for him, that where he had no faith, my faith was provided; where he lacked in thanksgiving and praise, my life (soul) was the compensation - I would believe and give thanks for him. Yet I also knew (and said) that it was beyond me, I myself wasn't doing it, but the Lord in me.

I told Les I was that [second goat](#) presented alive on the Day of Atonement. I also told him I may yet need to do what he [originally said](#) I ought to do with Marilyn and Sean (by reason and law) - to expel Sean and remove Marilyn from authority at the farm. For the time, I had to obey and *"let it happen."*

The Lord's brothers had urged Jesus to go up to the feast. He told them that they should go, that they were free to go as they pleased, whereas He could not. Later on, He went. Les acknowledged that he had been going by the natural. I told him the natural was the synagogue of Satan... the carnal mind at enmity with God, the thinking and ways of the man of sin, who comes with reason, logic, knowledge, and the letter of the Law of God.

### Particle - Marilyn Blames Me

Surprisingly, yet not, Sean suddenly said he didn't have the same feelings for Marilyn he once had. Marilyn was fighting and blaming me for it. I talked to Lois, and she confirmed that Marilyn was doing just that. I couldn't seem to do anything right, and Marilyn blamed me for any wrong.

My God, she was ugly! What a horrid spectacle! I felt like I did battle with a vigorous, vicious venomous viper. Praise God, we have (He has) the victory. I didn't even have to fight her. She fought with God Himself, Whose angels battled on my behalf. I only needed to believe... and I did.

### Particle - Jonathan Praises Me

Twice in 24 hours, Jonathan said to me, "You're the best dad ever." I asked him why. He said, "Because you do things for me and let me do things." In the past, I'd been restrictive with him, and he was expecting restrictions now that I didn't require. I never knew how to take these things.

## **Page 13**

### Particle - Bedridden in Pain

My leg pain increased, growing worse daily, and I could now hardly walk. Because I lied at the theater, saying we had diet restrictions, now I would have diet restrictions. What a horrible thing I did, and for what? A popcorn and soda snack in the theater, against their policies and wishes? How evil and carnal of me! And what a price to pay! *"Lord, please forgive and cleanse and heal! I know I deserve evil - I do - yet I ask Your mercy. I had health, for which I should have praised and thanked You. Instead, I took it for granted and lied."*

On May 18<sup>th</sup>, the leg pain was so horrible and crippling, I couldn't get out of bed, while Jonathan and Marilyn headed to the farm. I couldn't so much as slightly flex my knee. One night, I moved it and shouted out loud in pain, unable to help myself. I was sure the neighbors, if awake, would hear and wonder at it. I began to take Tylenol, which I hated doing, knowing its evil effects, particularly on the liver. I had Chris Den Hertog and his wife do some of the quick, small chores for me each day, like watering the plants and feeding the birds.

Curiously, simultaneously, Lois scalded her feet with hot water, and Mark was having neck problems. It seemed we were the guilty ones and were suffering consequences for our sins, particularly opposing Marilyn and Sean.

On May 21<sup>st</sup>, the Lord made it known to me that He wasn't condemning me for the theater incident but was exposing me for good. I told neighbor Chris of the incident and expressed how we humans are such a thankless bunch, not appreciating God's blessings and taking so much for granted.

As I lay in bed, I was reading a book on the Feast of Tabernacles, which I had picked up at a garage sale. In it, Neusner, the author, was saying that the significance of this Feast was that all noxious and evil influences were being ceremonially removed. This struck me. My problems at the theater were hypocrisy, fear of man, and unbelief. Pain is a cleansing agent.

One day during this time, I had a series of sharp muscle spasms in my leg in a matter of minutes that drove me to tears. Marilyn sat there, coolly watching. Shortly after, I felt like something necessary happened. I got more spasms - the pain was as intense, but now dull instead of sharp. Something had changed, and I didn't holler out. That evening, Marilyn said that Mark, Lois, and I were suffering because of our stance toward Sean.

I went to bed and slept very well for the first time in days, with no painkillers. In the night I was awakened by a spasm and was immediately told, *"Suffer this and you'll have your reward."* After that night and five days of being laid up, the pain slowly began to disappear, and I eventually regained full use of my leg. I visited Dr. Michael Pratt, MD, who diagnosed my problem as a meniscal cyst.

While confined in my room, I heard a robin calling, "We are all waiting for you." It meant all of creation. There seemed to be an element of gentle impatience.

### Particle - The Hagedorns

Dave and Marcia Hagedorn purchased the property behind our place. Marcia professed faith in Christ, but would have nothing to do with any conversation concerning Him. "Let's just be friends, but let's not talk about God."

She deemed faith to be a personal thing and said she looked to Bill Roycroft of Lethbridge Christian Tabernacle as her pastor, friend, and mentor - the one she went to with problems or questions. Curiously, I asked the Lord what I could learn from Marcia.

### Particle - The Doctrine of Free Will

The doctrine of free will has been used as a fear tactic to control others. It presupposes that it is in man to will and to do of God's good pleasure. It suggests that man can be saved only if he wants to be, yet God says, **"No man seeks after God, not one" (Romans 3)**. God says we're slaves to sin, but man says we're not. God says He alone is Savior, but man says he has the power to save himself by choosing the right path.

This doctrine breeds self-righteousness. "You're not choosing right, not because you can't, but because you won't. I chose right - now you live up to my example and my expectations, or God and I will not approve."

It seems to me that if I know I can do something and do it, it is far more likely I will look down my nose at my neighbor than if I believe that, unless God does something for me, I don't stand a chance.

From the very beginning, men have tried to exercise power over other men and change them to their liking, only to find out they can't change themselves. If they knew they couldn't change themselves, would they be so inclined to try to change others? The doctrine, the lie that man is endowed with a free will, nurtures pride and contempt for both man and God.

Before Adam and Eve were ever defiled as we have been, they could choose, but they proved to choose only evil. How much more shall their progeny fail, with brother killing brother? And how much more shall we, their descendants in this present day, at the bottom of the barrel, fail without Christ the Savior? We have the freedom to choose, but do we have the freedom to do what is right? Not without Christ, we don't. As the proverb goes:

***"O LORD, I know that the way humans act is not under their control. Humans do not direct their steps as they walk" (Jeremiah 10:23 GW).***

#### **Particle - Lois' Dream: Two of Victor**

About May 23-24, 2000, Lois had a very interesting dream of me. In some busy public place she saw two of me, one, my present age, and one younger (about 25 to 30, she said). They were both clearly me, and they were laughing and talking to each other and to others.

This agreed with the wolf and lamb [vision](#) I had, and with Bob Gregson's [dream](#) of the two men, who were also both me. There was also a "both me" in my [first dream](#), as He revealed to me 12 years later.

Dave Roberts in 1975 or 1976 [said](#) mockingly, "I suppose you think you're the two witnesses!" While he was speaking to me, was he meaning just me or me and someone unspecified with me? This comment came up out of the blue; the topic was not remotely discussed, though he and his partner, Bill Kellers, thought I was too serious about spiritual matters. (Dave was co-pastor with Bill; they were later exposed to be homosexuals.)

#### **Particle - Marilyn's Admission of Wrong a First**

I was going to meet with a woman to address her on spiritual matters and error. Normally, I would take Marilyn with me to avoid complications of any kind or appearances of possible indiscretion. This time, I told Marilyn I didn't want her with me. If she couldn't stand with me in general life matters, why would I want her there as a second witness in talking to others of even more important matters?

Her reply was that I needed her there because I was with another woman. I said, "Listen to your own advice. How is it you retain the right and freedom to meet with Sean privately and engage in intimate conversation with him, yet are concerned about me? He fantasizes about you sexually, openly admits it, you don't show any disagreement or displeasure about it, and you're concerned about something like that happening to me? What gives?"

For the first time that I can recall, she partially admitted her folly and contradiction. She said she knew she was wrong but couldn't do anything about it. Still, I heard defiance in her voice.

## Particle - A Letter of Proposed Reorganization at Farm

On May 26<sup>th</sup>, I wrote a letter to the farm and, with some hesitation, gave it to them on the 28<sup>th</sup> to read.

May 26, 2000

TO: All those at the farm  
FROM: Victor

I hereby make the following changes in relationships at the farm. Effective immediately, under Marilyn, Lois, as a believing mother, will have the final word concerning all things pertinent to, and included in, the farm activities. Sean is no longer to be considered a head there nor permitted to tell anyone what to do. His spiritual stance and counsel are accursed. He will only request and seek permission and cooperation.

Why should I place Lois in charge?

- 1) Why should I have one in charge who opposes me (Sean)?
- 2) Lois may be a woman, but she now believes while the other, though a man, doesn't; she submits while the other doesn't; better a believing woman than an unbelieving man.
- 3) Shall an unapologetic and self-proclaimed adulterer of my wife remain over all that is mine?
- 4) Lois is the mother of two of the men there, and the third is their age.
- 5) She now has victory, having been tried and subjected to what was needed for the time.
- 6) It's not acceptable that a young man should be there castigating a mother, and that before her sons. It breeds ill for the family and disrespect for parents, robbing mother and sons of dignity. I bear responsibility here.
- 7) Lois hears from the Lord while Sean doesn't.
- 8) I expect more cooperation and harmony with one another if we make our relationships according to the ways of the Lord, and we will receive the Lord's blessing (Proverbs 26:8).

As I contemplated these matters, I opened *The Complete Dead Sea Scrolls* and my eyes fell on the following words: "...fidelity is always rewarded and apostasy chastised."

Shall I or we worship God or mammon? If the farm is to go, so be it.

Whom shall I place in charge of that which is mine? Someone who refuses to be rebuked and is unrepentant, or someone who has heard rebuke and humbled herself? Someone who thinks he knows it all or someone who humbles herself before the One Who knows it all?

I consider that we shall do well if, at long last, we so honor the Lord Who is All-Wise, forsaking one wise in his own eyes, but who has less hope than that of a fool. God will demonstrate the difference between looking to Him Who *alone* is indispensable and to one who only thinks and appears to be so. At this point I marvel that I allow Sean to stay at all.

Now I recognize that everything is purely voluntary on the part of all those at the farm; I can't command anyone by law to do anything, but I do have a human, legal, and moral right to decide whether anyone does this or that with what is mine. Above all, I believe that this is the will of God for us all and that I follow His direction.



If this is so, I believe we will see God bless as He has not formerly been able. Why should He grant blessing without measure to those who stand in arrogance in the Name of the Lord, in the name of Harvest Haven, impudently flaunting adultery in the face of its owners, despising both man and God and His Law, defaming us and the Lord before all, being a law unto themselves, and usurping the rights and authority of the owners thereof?

Is not the hand of the Lord bound thus on our behalf? I think so. Only out of sheer mercy has He granted everything so far, though we'll never be deserving of anything from Him. Yet, if there are no rewards but only further hardships, so be it. We have no choice and should have no inclination but to obey, not for reward, but for righteousness' sake, for His sake.

Pertinent verses: Proverbs 12:15; 14:9; 15:5; 3:35; 13:19; 14:16; 26:8; 26:12; 28:26 [given below]

The following conditions apply:

1) I would hope that everyone assumes the same responsibilities he or she has, volunteering his or her talents and abilities as in the past, now in submission to Mrs. Benson's discretion, yet taking responsibility for all things as before, without expecting Mrs. Benson to have the knowledge or capability of an earthly supervisor. The Lord is with her in her lack.

2) As her sons submit to, and honor, their mother, so I expect Sean to submit to Lois, and while they address her as "Mother," Sean shall address her respectfully and dutifully as "Mrs. Benson," particularly in public. It is as though all are sons in terms of what is expected of them, honoring and obeying a mother as dutiful, caring, responsible, godly sons. I don't say that this is what they all are, but I am saying what they ought to be and what is expected of them.

3) Because Sean has seduced my wife, who can't easily find her way to disagreeing with him on matters, there's the danger that she'll overrule on Sean's behalf that which Lois decides and which he doesn't agree with. I'll trust Marilyn not to do so, but if at any time Mrs. Benson has any such concern, she can appeal to me and, reluctantly, I'll render a decision as I see fit, Lord willing.

There are many things that could be discussed and considered. I would hope that Trevor and Mark would find themselves just in the Lord, not in selfishness taking advantage of the potential favor created in these circumstances, and that they would humbly seek to do what's right and fair for all concerned. Indeed, you would do well to remember that the Lord watches over all and judges all.

Lois, your time of shame is at an end. The Lord has humbled, tried, healed, and delivered you. In believing Him, you've gained the victory. In humbling yourself before Him and repenting of your ways, He has seen fit to lift you up and honor you. You're the first one there to prepare for the coming and comfort of the poor, the distressed, the downtrodden, those who will come to be ministered to, comforted, provided for, healed, and delivered.

Beware that from here on in, you don't lift yourself up, taking unrighteous advantage of this honor. The throne is established by mercy and truth. You've been a butcher and a liar, a hypocrite, unfit for any good thing, but the Lord has had mercy on you in belief of the truth and you shall therefore function in same. Remember where you came from - God is no respecter of persons. He exalts the lowly and abases the proud and stiff-necked.

I'm sorry to have known the experience of Proverbs 17:21 but there it is, all in God's wisdom and plan. **"He who fathers a fool does it to his sorrow; the father of a fool has no joy."**

Marilyn, I ask that you begin to respect Lois' spiritual counsel, rebuke, and/or entreaties, considering they're from the Lord and for your salvation. Don't let me have to know that Sean withstands her as he does me. If he does, remaining unrepentant and arrogant as ever, I'll have no choice but to take further action.

I consider that this great and terrible bog we're in is the fruit of my doings because not understanding or practising the ways of the Lord. Nevertheless, He has spoken to me and shown me that we're all in unrighteousness. He has purposed the delusion, snares, and judgment for our salvation that we may know good and evil, His authority and order and His righteousness, and that we may turn to Him with all our hearts. For all that, those who believe can be very thankful. A fresh breeze is indeed blowing across the land. It shall drive away the wicked like chaff, while the godly are left to stand in the congregation of the righteous.

**"The wise shall inherit glory; but shame shall be the promotion of fools" (Proverbs 3:35 MKJV).**

**"The way of a fool is right in his own eyes, but he who listens to advice is wise" (Proverbs 12:15 MKJV).**

**"The desire fulfilled is sweet to the soul, but it is hateful to fools to turn from evil" (Proverbs 13:19 MKJV).**

**"Fools laugh at sin, but among the righteous there is favor" (Proverbs 14:9 MKJV).**

**"A wise one fears and departs from evil, but the fool rages and is sure" (Proverbs 14:16 MKJV).**

**"A fool despises his father's instruction, but he who listens to correction is wise" (Proverbs 15:5 MKJV).**

**"As he who binds a stone in a sling, so is he who gives honor to a fool" (Proverbs 26:8 MKJV).**

**"Do you see a man wise in his own eyes? There is more hope for a fool than for him" (Proverbs 26:12 MKJV).**

**"He who trusts in his own heart is a fool; but whoever walks wisely, he shall be delivered" (Proverbs 28:26 MKJV).**

This letter was written 140 days after I reported to the farm my [vision](#) of Sean dying.

Particle - Marilyn's Reaction

I didn't tell Marilyn about the letter until the night before delivery. She blew! The whole house, the neighborhood, and the countryside were charred, as though a great bomb was detonated. She spent the night planning divorce.

And what did the letter call for? Only respect for elders, for authorities, and for parents, proper order of things, and cooperation. Nor did I take away her authority as owner of the farm, except that I had final say, which should be so, anyway. Her utter disgust was primarily at the notion that Sean should treat Lois with the respect due an older person, a mother, and a believer in Christ.

Marilyn rejected this letter as not of God. She said so and said she wouldn't honor or comply with it. I told her that she could do as she pleased, that I was no longer willing to strive with her, and that I was no longer responsible for her. I offered her a settlement of half the goods, though I didn't believe it was coming to her.

She had rejected divorce, saying she expected things to change. I told her I wasn't going to wait around to die, as she was, and I was no longer willing to live in a relationship where she dominated, one in which she rejected me as her head.

I now waited on the Lord for the next step. This letter served to further expose Sean and her, though I wondered that there was any further need. Clearly, she was an adulteress - one who plays between two or more, one being a legitimate husband - and made no apology for it. Witchcraft was at work here.

The Lord held against a church that they permitted Jezebel to do the very things Marilyn did. Was I hesitating and neglecting to do something I'd been commanded to do (as per Jonathan's [prophecy](#))? I would know. I truly hated what she did to Jonathan.

**"Lord, I pray Your direction and intervention. Thank You."**

I saw a Medusa-headed dragon roused from her lair, full of fire, smoke, and fury, rocks splitting, earth shaking, feet stomping, raging, screaming hideously to pierce not only ears, but soul and heart. When I asked Marilyn what specifically she found wrong with the letter, she couldn't say. All I saw the letter doing was calling for humility, obedience, lawfulness, and order, according to God and not man. True, wrong people could be placed in authority (how much choice did we have left?), but who, of all people, was she to decide who would be in charge?

### **Particle - Dream: Being Killed by Friends**

On the night of May 30, 2000, I had a dream. There were people coming to kill me; they were familiar and posing as friends. I had opportunity to run and escape. I was afraid and very sorrowful. I began to run and could have escaped, apparently, but a nondescript friend advised and encouraged me not to run but to let them do their will on me. I expected to be stabbed, more likely from the back than from the front. But when they came, they set me in a large wooden chair with bulky arms, upon which they laid my arms.

There was debate and hesitation among them, almost as if they sought justification within and without to kill me, though I was entirely innocent. The emotional pain of it was terrible. I knew there would be no reprieve or mercy. A great part of the pain was that these people justified themselves and posed as friends, yet were plainly my enemies.

One young man didn't want to wait any longer. He took an old-fashioned spike in one hand and a hammer in the other. The spike was thick and about four inches long. They held my right arm down on the wooden arm of the chair, and he drove in the spike. I screamed. The pain was horrible, and then shock began to set in and the pain assuaged. They then did the same to my left hand. They took my feet and nailed them, one over the other to the cement floor. I wondered how the spike could penetrate the cement.

Later, I saw my body from above as though it were someone else's. I saw the gaping wounds in the feet and a large gaping wound in the right side. I don't recall clearly seeing the hands. Viewing this body from above, I was dressed in a long white gown that hung down to my feet, and on my feet were those spike wounds, quite open and large, not covered by the hem of the gown. A woman looked at my wounded feet as if to say, "No big deal." I was bare and tender-footed on bare ground.

Marilyn had asked, "Where is God?" The best I could answer was that by remaining and not fleeing, by letting them do their will on me, killing me, this was God. Doing His will **was** Him. I also felt that this was not a future matter, but one I was experiencing. I'm reminded of Zechariah 13:6:

**"And one shall say to him, 'What are these wounds in your hands?' Then he shall answer, 'Those with which I was wounded in the house of those who love Me'" (Zechariah 13:6 MKJV).**

I know how Jesus felt when He was taken and slain.

### Particle - God Hates the Sinner

It is said that God hates the sin, but loves the sinner. This isn't true. The sinner produces the sin. He hates the sinner. However, His solution is to save and not destroy that which He hates.

I'd said to Marilyn, who oft said that I hated her, "I don't hate you, but I hate what you are." This may sound convoluted or contradictory, but I think these to be accurate and just words. We are grievous creatures as sinners, and He hates us as we are, but He determines to lay down His life to save us from our hateful selves. Indeed, only by laying down the life can He have us, if He wants us. Now to lay down the life for such - **that** is love, not this touchy-feely, emotional, sentimental, pretentious thing preachers promote everywhere in nominal Christian circles that makes the proud gloat and the humble gag.

### Particle - Prayer and Rebuke for Marilyn

On June 1<sup>st</sup>, I prayed with Marilyn that the Lord's grace would overcome her sin and that His power would be manifest as greater than hers. She resented the prayer. She mocked and taunted me. I said, "The Lord rebuke you." I told her that the day she took full responsibility for herself, instead of blaming everyone and everything else, especially me, the door would open to her salvation. I also warned her that she better encourage Sean to submit to Lois because if he resisted her, out he went.

Sean refused to recognize any authority other than himself and wouldn't do as I requested. He continued to ignore me and to have business talks with Marilyn. I again warned her that they were to be in consultation with Lois. Jonathan reported to me that Sean only pretended to comply just so he wouldn't be thrown out. Jonathan also continuously heard, "*Fulfill the prophecy,*" referring to casting Sean out. Barring a miracle, I would be notifying Sean to leave.

## **Particle - A Talk with Sean**

Sean and I had a talk. He said he wasn't coming against me. He had a problem with Lois ever since she had her fast. He said my recent letter wasn't of God.

"Where do you see yourself in relationship to the Lord right now?" I asked.

"If I believe and walk by faith, I'm okay," he replied (meaning to believe Marilyn's prophecy that I was going to die and that they were going to marry).

"Where do you see yourself in relationship to me?" I asked.

"Beloved enemy, bitter friend," was the phrase that came to him.

"Where do you stand in relationship to Marilyn?" I asked.

He said that two years before, he related to her as his mother, and then said, "She will be my wife." He said he saw her as mother, wife, and fellow worker. He said that on June 8, 1998, I had asked him to choose between me and Marilyn. He said he chose Marilyn, believed the prophecy, and the fruits of that faith would be forthcoming. As Marilyn heard these answers, she was impressed, flattered, and relieved that he was taking this stand.

He said he didn't know if he had read all the letters I sent to them at the farm. His main disagreement with the last letter was having to call Lois "Mrs. Benson." (By the way, Lois was about 25 years older than he.) He rejected Lois' right to run the farm. In other words, I as the owner had no right to choose whom I would. He didn't say that, but what else could it mean?

## **Particle - Marilyn Declares Her Position**

On June 4<sup>th</sup>, Marilyn said to me, "Sean is my husband, not you; he is my head and I submit to him, not you." Which provoked me to say, "Sean goes, and if you choose, you go with him" (she had said that if he went, she would go with him). I called Lois to tell him to pack. He questioned why I didn't come to him personally. Marilyn declared that we should meet and talk. I agreed and we went.

Marilyn fought, but the Lord gave me words to speak, particularly Scriptures such as Psalm 1; 119:105, and Proverbs 29:18. Marilyn and Sean spoke adamantly of walking by faith, even while they brushed aside the Word and Law of God. I said the devils also believe; the whole spiritual realm operates by faith; faith in and of itself can be idolatry and valueless when we don't have love for God and neighbor (I Corinthians 13:2).

They had cast aside the Law of God, contemning it, all in the Name of the Lord and in pretense of walking by faith. The Scripture we brought up was that we are to live by every word that proceeds from God's mouth. Lois emphasized the word "every," including the written Word they have rejected. I think the Scripture with the emphasis on "every" was a significant thrust of the sword into the heart of the enemy. Was that the [shot](#) that tore the bear's heart?

Marilyn proposed that she cease going to the farm, that I go and run it, and that she would give me whatever input she could, provided Sean stayed. Nobody agreed to it, not the Bensons, not Jonathan, and not I. Jonathan had a vision of something from the east that would come for Sean.

We began to think in terms of Bob Fife coming to get Sean. We called Bob, and he prepared to come.

### **Particle - Jonathan's Vision: Jet Going East**

For what it's worth, Jonathan said he saw a "V," as of a passenger jet taking off to the east, wondering about Sean leaving and going in that direction. I suppose he was considering possibilities of Sean having a place to go. He asked who lived in that direction, asking about my mother in Manitoba and about Sean's father in Toronto.

### **Particle - Guilt Pangs and a Desire for Reconciliation with Archie**

On June 6<sup>th</sup>, I composed and sent the following letter to Archie. Lois wasn't in agreement and neither was anyone else, but I insisted. The others thought that perhaps I was seeing things given of God they didn't understand and therefore didn't wish to withstand me. They also wanted good things for Archie and his family.

The letter is poorly expressed and written, but I thought it best to leave it unedited as a reflection of where I was at the time:

*June 6, 2000*

TO: Archie, Cathie, and family  
FROM: Victor

I have something else to apologize to you all for. It came to me before yet escaped my memory and therefore the last letter. I don't know why, because God knows it has bothered me so much that it was such an abominable thing to me, though I don't know that it was the most hurtful by any measure or means.

I twice apologized to Danny for it, and he said he forgave me, but I didn't apologize to you, Archie and Cathie, and should have. It was when I gave Danny the nosebleed. If it is any consolation, I did not mean to hurt him, nor did I expect to happen what happened by the way I did it, but it happened. I also think that the blood would make it seem much worse than it might be.

I know that the spankings the kids got, any and every one of them, would have been far more painful. But I did this in a stupid and evil anger; I did it without you, his parents, having no right to do it even with you. If it is any consolation again, I was constantly lied to, there were so many things seemingly out of control, with nobody wanting to take responsibility and care for anything, and I was constantly losing it, that incident being only one of many with all.

But none of these things absolve me. I'm guilty, I know it, and I ask your forgiveness. If you had done something like that to Jonathan, I would have been prepared to shoot you, I should think, at least have nothing more to do with you, just as you feel toward me now. What is worst of all is that the Lord brought you and entrusted you to me and I sorely abused that trust.

Another thing, Archie: As a work of love, as a faithful and generous servant, you hand-made a dresser for Jonathan. You rejoiced at his coming; you rejoiced with me; I remember it, in



spite of the battles you were having. I have enjoyed it; Jonathan has enjoyed it but I have not appreciated YOU.

So then, you made a rifle for the boys. Out of your busy time and pressures, you lovingly fashioned toys for them, for my son, and what did I do? Send it back to you when you were leaving, kicked out. Hypocrite! Yes, I was debating the idea of guns but I don't believe that was the issue. I was returning something of you.

Well then, why not return the dresser? Hypocrite! Too valuable? Too much trouble? Yes, there is a line drawn somewhere in time but the whole thing was a wicked thing, as far as I'm concerned. I have caused you and Cathie great grief. So has Marilyn, and how much you don't know, but right now I don't speak for her but for myself, and of myself I am thoroughly ashamed.

Could or should I pay you for the dresser? I'd be glad to, if you say, "Yes," and name a price. But I know that money is not the issue and paying you for it would be an insult to you.

I had other thoughts on the loan. That was a strange incident and I do wish you would refresh my memory of the details because they do escape me truly. In getting a loan, you weren't trying to rob or deceive. You were trying to pay something you, in your mind, whether accurate or not, owed. In honoring that debt, you were prepared to go into debt if necessary. In your state, you could see no other way.

Justified or not, unbelief or not, it wasn't as though you were trying to do something immoral or illegal, although the man picking up sticks on the Sabbath wasn't doing anything immoral in itself (or even illegal in itself until Moses' Law came in force), but he was stoned, counted one as worthy of death for what we can, in the flesh, count a petty misdemeanor.

Who can understand God's judgments as to their legitimacy or severity? No man. So even as I write these things, trying to see them from your standpoint, I get checked, reminded that though I have been such a wicked person in my own sight, so regretful of hurting you people (and I can't deny these things to be true of me), still the Lord was over all and there was purpose in it, His judgment, His ways, past finding out. So I must have balance here for both our sakes.

But I know this, that the day of my fury and anger and force are gone, by the grace of God never to return, the thought of such returning as the thought of eating your, or anyone else's, dung to me. That is how much I hate what I've done with you guys. Will you please, please forgive me? I beg you to forgive me.

I know that money buys no forgiveness or repentance or any other good thing, and I don't offer it to you for that reason. I also know that money will not buy me a clean conscience.

If you will believe me in spite of what I write you here, while I have abhorrence and deep regret for the way I've been, I also have a victory. The Lord has forgiven me for my sins and has spared me and not cast me off as I knew I fully deserved and as I expected He would, and thought He had.

It is only out of victory, brokenness before the Lord that you would find me repenting of my wrongs to you, confessing them and begging your forgiveness. It is only out of the Lord's kind of victory and not man's (in which flesh vaunts itself) that I can humble myself before you

and in tears beg your forgiveness. I don't care how wrong you might have been, real or perceived. I only care about how wrong I've been, toward you, toward Paul and Kerri, toward everyone. I care to rectify, to retribute, compensate, redeem, restore, to make right anything I can, anything God grants me to do so.

Do not think that I speak out of desperate circumstances. Whether things go well or hard, I want to reconcile myself with you in the Lord. I want to do you good, to do all I can for you. If money answers any matters, not because it is the solution, so be it. If you have dental bills or dental work to be done; if you need chiropractic or medical care; if you are in dire straits, in need of anything, I would like to help you.

I'm not trying to buy you or buy clean conscience or pay for my wrongs with money. It simply can't be done; I know that. I just want you to know that I DO LOVE YOU NOW, THAT GOD LOVES YOU, and that I am prepared to give and to serve however is pleasing in God's sight for your sakes.

Lois too has come to a victory she has never had. She too is sorry for all she has been and done to you guys. She has seen herself as an ugly, brutish whore. I know that you would have to hear from her and Lord willing, you will. She doesn't want to write; she wants to talk to you. Why you haven't heard from her thus far, I don't know, except that, as I said earlier, the Lord is giving a check, as if saying:

*"Let's not get this out of balance; yes, you've been wrong, as all flesh is, but Archie and Cathie too are flesh and therefore have been in wrongness as well, and while it behooves you to repent of your wrongs toward them, still have I worked all things according to the counsel of My will and all things have been with purpose. It will help them to forgive you and to be reconciled with you in knowing that while you meant things for evil, I have meant them for good. Yet I know too, that you did not mean them evil any more than David meant the children of Israel evil when I provoked him to count them and thus many perished in the plagues I sent because of the census."*

You had said in a note, "Let the Lord show you." Well, He is. Please forgive. Please answer. Nevertheless, I know that all things are in the hands of the Lord, that things must all have their time and so I will leave it there and not badger you. The Lord's will be done. The Lord grant you all that you need, for His sake and for all of our sakes.

Again, I know that victory will come for you when you acknowledge Jesus as Lord of all things, both good and evil, past and present, obvious and hidden, giving thanks in everything, this being the will of God in Christ Jesus concerning all those who are His. His kingdom does indeed reign over all, neither can the gates of Hell prevail against His will; indeed, they serve His purposes. God is to be praised.

I wouldn't hear from Archie until the end of February 2001.

## **Page 14**

### **Particle - Final Struggles**

A journal entry:

What a struggle I've had! Cast Sean out - don't - do - don't. Let it happen - it's finished - let it happen - it's finished. Before my face, Marilyn and Sean act quite cocky and impudent, confident that they will prevail, likely that God will prevent me from interfering with them and their plans. The Bensons tell me that Sean has refused to obey anything of my letter, believing I have no authority in God's will to require anything of him or of Marilyn.

Today, on June 11, I realized three things, as Jonathan and I took a walk to the river:

**One**, I said, "Lord, I don't know what to do!" I immediately heard, *"Would you hesitate to cast him out if you had others capable of doing the work?"* I knew the answer was, "No."

**Two**, I realized I haven't been able to praise the Lord. It has stopped at thanking Him with gritted teeth. The last time this was so was when I wasn't obeying Him in sending Man of Sin 3 to the farm.

**Three**, I recall the proverb Paul received for our situation years ago: **"Cast out the scorner, and contention shall go out; yea, strife and reproach shall cease" (Proverbs 22:10)**. At the time, we applied it to Archie, but it didn't witness to me that Archie was the man.

For the record: Now I know that it applies to Sean and that in throwing him out, **contention will go** with him, and yes, strife and **reproach will cease, not instantly**, as an axe chop, but as a setting sun. We will all marvel. Marilyn will have her eyes opened and be ashamed. We will wonder that we were so blind to Sean's influence, yet will know the Lord has done all these things for us.

**Four**, I'll be able to come to the farm again and feel at home, not to work... to help, if needful, but to visit, eat, and be free with the others. Yes, this is long overdue or, if I know anything of the Lord and His ways, perfect in timing.

**Five**, When at last this afternoon I decided that Sean had to go, I was once more singing in my spirit and do have praise for the Lord again. Righteously or otherwise, let the Lord judge.

Sean has had seven days to obey the letter sent to the farm. He has decided to ignore it. The Bensons report nothing has changed. His heart has been made specifically manifest. Marilyn can't see the farm operating without him, yet says it is the Lord doing it. If the Lord is doing it, then He can manage without Sean.

## Particle - Final Notice to Sean

June 11, 2000

TO: Sean and the farm  
FROM: Victor

Sean, you have rejected my legitimacy and authority as a man of God, a true prophet coming in His stead, sent to you and to others. How? You have despised my prophecies, letters to the farm, particularly "Man of Sin 1, 2, and 3," and others as well. You prefer to believe the lie. You have rejected many things I've said to all of you, writing them off as products of unbelief, pain, and darkness. You not only agreed with, but also orchestrated

and presided over, my severance from the people of the farm, my banishment, and my death, and so it had to be.

You have rejected my legitimacy as a spiritual father in that it is I who begat you in the Spirit by the laying on of hands, having cast out devils to which you were in bondage, having taught you many things of the Spirit and the Kingdom, whether directly or by Marilyn, who took those things which were mine of God and which I gave to her freely as I had received them. There is no honor from you towards me as a son to a father - an understatement.

You have rejected my legitimacy as a believer in Christ. How? You have made it a policy and practice to judge me after the flesh, after my infirmities, and have generally concluded that I have very little if anything of spiritual value to offer. Again, the things of the Spirit I have said you have despised, not so much in content (though that, too) as application, serving your own ends.

You have rejected my legitimacy as a simple elder, one old enough to be your father even if not in the Spirit. You know no boundaries, no limits, having no regard for the sake of righteousness or for the Lord or for the sake of others. You may appear respectful and considerate toward others from time to time, but you base your conduct and choices on what is expedient for you and your ends. Your motivation is not love of God and neighbor, nor do you walk by faith, as do saints.

You have rejected my legitimacy as Marilyn's husband in that you have treated her as, and assumed her to be, yours. By your own lips, twice, I have heard you declare that you view her as your wife. Furthermore, you have had your intimate conversations with her in your liaison, as though she were your lawful mate. You even declared there was no reason to apologize or repent of your sexual fantasies of her. You have rejected our marriage as legitimate. Tied in with that, unavoidably, I think, you have rejected my legitimacy as my son Jonathan's father and have presumed to begin to "father" him in my stead.

You have rejected my legitimacy as owner of the farm and all that it contains. You have not been altogether discreet about the fact that you haven't wanted me there. You have even judged my phone conversations with the Bensons troublesome and illegitimate.

Most recently and pronouncedly, you rejected my right to determine whom I should choose as the authority there and how I should require you and others to conduct yourselves to one another. "The letter is not of God," you say. Even if it was my own letter, not inspired or directed of God, you have rejected even my right to speak as owner of the farm.

You have, in short, rejected my legitimacy as a person. To you I have been an unwelcome pest, much as a cockroach or fly. You have rejected my right to live. You have declared me *persona non grata*, unfit for this world, which you have presumed to take over and to reign. I think you would deny some of this. It seems you have even had your pangs of guilt and doubts, wondering why you weren't having fellowship with me. I have voluntarily given it from time to time, in spite of your stance, but you have, in the end, laid the cause of lack of fellowship at my feet and have chosen the path you have chosen.

Absalom did the very same with his father, David, whose legitimacy he rejected as a prophet chosen of God, believer, king (ruler of the people), father (his father), elder, husband (of the concubines he ravished publicly), and person (he sought his very life). "Beloved enemy,

bitter friend,” you say of our relationship? Indeed, but by your choice and not mine, yet I suppose, as with David, for my past sins and ways.

At this moment, I have a bitter woman, defiled by you. But the Lord has given us this promise: **“Cast out the scorner, and contention shall go out; yea, strife and reproach shall cease.”** Archie was not the scorner. Though he had his sins and problems, he believed and received according to his faith. Neither did contention cease - proof that he wasn’t *the* scorner.

You are the scorner, and with you will go contention; strife and reproach shall cease, and peace will come to us at last. This I have received of the Lord and I go on record for all. Therefore, the sooner you go, the better for all of us. Woe to us if we do not expedite the command of the Lord in this matter as we ought.

While you have been industrious, studious, and responsible at and for the farm (giving you the benefit of the doubt), you have either forgotten or have never recognized me as a legitimate factor in the whole equation, as discussed above in various aspects and offices. You have rejected God Himself: **“He that rejects you rejects Me, and he that rejects Me rejects Him that sent Me.”**

To you I was as good as dead, and you even once declared to others quite some time ago, “The sooner he’s gone, the better.” The Pharisees, too, were zealous of the Law (though never keeping it themselves where it didn’t suit them), fulfilling many and diverse religious works, not considering that their dedication and works of sacrifice were an abomination to God because they weren’t serving Him from the heart as they pretended.

**“The fool has said in his heart, There is no God.”** You are that fool. For you to be so presumptuous and impudent as to declare in the face of the husband that his wife is yours, and *that* in the midst of a group of believers, is to proclaim yourself the fool of fools. Can there be any greater fool? In rejecting me in all those ways as stated above, you have plainly said, “There is no God; I am a God unto myself; I AM; I do as I please and legislate as I please, being God.”

What does God do with such a one? What do you expect me to do? Believe and humor you forever? Even nature, both physical and spiritual, cries out against such perversity and abomination. Sooner or later something must give. It has been later because of both the purposes and longsuffering of God.

When Archie was cast out, my question to those who insisted on it was, “For what sin? What charge do you bring against him?” They had none. Much like Pilate presiding over the judgment of Christ, Whom they condemned because they wanted their own way. But you! If there was ever sure foundation not only by the Law of God, but by all that is good and pure and holy and honest and just and righteous and true and godly for, not only expulsion but execution, it’s with you and your presumption, impudence, arrogance - your unapologetic wickedness. Christ was cast out and Barabbas was embraced when it should have been the other way around. Was Archie innocent? I don’t think so, but compared to you, he was an angel. He believed; you don’t.

You once said I had called you a bastard. I denied it, not realizing I had. Did I do it subconsciously, inadvertently, yet in truth? You insisted I had called you a bastard. Perhaps I had, and for good reason. You have certainly despised chastening in any form, determining



that you alone have the wisdom, faith, and spirituality to decide right and wrong, good and evil.

What choice do you leave me with in your unrepentance, but to purge the leaven that breeds contempt for God's order, authority, and righteousness, condemning them and displacing them with your own personal brands, yet in the Name of the Lord and of faith, and accusing me of same?

I heard nothing but what I expected on the June 4<sup>th</sup> meeting that Marilyn requested. You were calculating and crafty as usual, answering in vagaries and generalities, avoiding incrimination justly yours, yet condemning yourself with your own mouth. And who can possibly say that my actions have been hasty, passionate without reason, uncompromising, impatient, intolerant, without longsuffering? Only a wicked, blind, and unrepentant fool would say so. You and you alone leave me no choice but to ask you to leave. With your offences, you ought to be thankful to leave alive. You don't deserve it.

So you tell the others that they must think for themselves. That is the essence of what the serpent said to Eve. I come, in the Name of the Lord, saying, "Here is what God says; here is how He sees things; this is His Law and will," but you say, "Don't listen to him; think for yourselves, else you are his sycophants." I inform you that they *are* thinking for themselves. They could just as easily choose to believe that you represent the Lord as you claim, and not I.

Lois and Trevor both believed you for a while, until they were delivered by the power of God resting in me. They, without force or threat, chose to think for themselves. Yet they aren't thinking for themselves. Lois, for example, decided to seek out the Lord's verdict and received, finding that I did indeed speak as of the Lord.

"It is right what man does in his own eyes," is your motto, provided they agree with you. "Think for yourselves!" the serpent declares, promoting the essence of sin - independence of God.

For all that, if there were repentance, surely I would forgive, because I want to, and hold no bitterness, nor does any other person there hold bitterness. There is not one person there that wants to see you go that I'm aware, yet they all (except my wife), even Jonathan, agree that you must go and go as soon as possible.

There need be no damaging, inconsiderate haste; on the other hand, there must be no lagging. Let's get this over with. You need to go, according to the command of the Lord. The Lord will take care of matters as He always has and shall, in ways beyond what He has in the past, His hands having been partially tied until we all have repented of our idols and unbelief, turning to Him, loving, believing, and obeying God.

**"Thou shalt have no other gods before Me."**

### Particle - Sean, the Enemy

Sean had his way, demanded it, and would go out as a devil, according to the prophecy recorded in December 1997. I knew he would despise my command to leave. He encouraged Marilyn's rebellion against me and contempt by all towards me. He was an evil influence against all authority and God.



He knew no boundaries. He disrespected any and all authorities and despised any relationships not expedient to him.

He spoke of faith and walking by faith but had the faith of devils, the lawless kind, independent of God and His will. He practiced the principles of faith to gain his own ends. He was the serpent.

What is a bastard? One who refuses chastening. Sean refused any and all correction. He is a bastard, not a son. Speaking as a man, Sean made himself indispensable to us, taking control of all things. **"All these kingdoms will I give you if you will fall down and worship me."** Sean, in nature, demanded honor and respect of all and had it. What a price I paid for "these things and the glory of them," the organic farm, the image, and the business.

For these earthly things we have been robbed of peace, joy, favor of God, and prosperity. We have forsaken the Law of God, countenancing adultery, having the Name of God blasphemed. And all the time, the words of Jesus in reply to Satan ring true: **"You shall worship the Lord, your God, and Him only shall you serve."** It is time to say, **"Get out, Satan!"**

When I went to the farm those four times in one day, speaking to everyone there, I saw Sean opposing me. He was the core of opposition in all evil. He was finished.

### Particle - Trevor Speaks

To Lois, Trevor said, "Victor doesn't have to worry about the farm; we can handle it." He also said that in kicking Sean out, our marriage would be restored and, moreover, changed to something we never had, a harmony wherein she took her proper place. Then God would begin to do good things.

All this came to me probably about the very same time that Trevor and Lois were speaking. Did I believe Trevor's claim of being able to handle the farm? No, except that the Lord would enable them. I had no confidence in them, but had to have it in the Lord.

### Particle - Jonathan Breaks the News to Marilyn

Jonathan informed Marilyn I was set on kicking Sean out. She broke down and begged me to reconsider. She then asked for time, "At least until the strawberries are done in September." I said I would consider, but not promise.

She called my letter to Sean and the farm one of condemnation. She likened Sean to David and me to King Saul. I said that may be so, but I couldn't help myself. I had to do what I had to do. But has God Himself ever condemned me and told me I was finished? Indeed, He told me I wouldn't be dying, and I didn't have an evil spirit, as far as I knew, quite the contrary.

And if I was as Saul, why would Marilyn have prophesied I would have a ministry like that of Moses? Can one imagine giving King Saul to meet with Jesus on the mount of transfiguration to discuss what must be accomplished in Jerusalem? Even David didn't have that privilege!

The Lord taught me much these past few years, dealt with me, delivered, exposed, chastened, blessed me, and opened my eyes. He didn't do these things with Saul, Nabal, Cain, Esau, Absalom, Ishmael, or Balaam. And David didn't treat Saul the way Sean has treated me.

### Particle - Marilyn's Reaction Tells

Marilyn's reaction only told me I was taking the way of the Lord. She now told me she had a journal and she didn't want me reading it, yet she always insisted on reading mine, even if I told her I wished to keep it to myself. She said that she didn't want anything to do with me, that her life has been Hell with me, that I'd made it so, especially this past recent while, and that she wished to go her way. I said she was free to do as she chose, and I wouldn't so much as reason with her.

Marilyn asked my permission to call Sean and talk to him about my decision (the Bensons hadn't yet been told). She said he was "sick" and considering his options. Now they knew I meant business.

### Particle - Back From the Dead

On June 12, I made the following entry in my journal: "I am back from the dead to do as I will with my enemies and my will is to replace false authority with true, feigned godliness with real, self-righteousness with Christ's, the enemy's rule with God's. Mark reports to me that Sean has gone to fasting. This reminds me of Joab fleeing to the altar and grasping the horns thereof to save himself from Solomon."

### Particle - Marilyn Blames Jonathan

Marilyn told Jonathan that he was responsible for Sean's expulsion because of his prophecy to kick him out! He immediately came to me, asking if in the Bible there were examples of where God caused men to prophesy words they didn't want to prophesy (he told Marilyn that he didn't want Sean to go, but that he stood on his prophecy).

I red to him about Balaam. "See, Mom? Here's an example of where people had to prophesy something they didn't want to." I marveled at his wisdom and unwavering. "I'm a million percent sure, Dad, that Sean has to go." It is the Lord, not Jonathan.

### Particle - Satan Un-surrendered

As at other occasions, Sean told Trevor that he was not their enemy, that they saw him as such because of my influence, and that **they needed to think for themselves**. I realized that while that sounds so good, it is yet another diabolical doctrine. To think for oneself, in and of itself neither good nor bad, can be the essence of sin, of independence of God. While independence of man can be a good thing (though not always), if a man of God comes and says, "Here is what God says; here is how He sees things; these are His Laws, and this is His will," then it is an evil thing for man to think for himself instead of believing and obeying God.

To think for oneself is the essence of what the serpent was saying to Eve: **"If you eat from this Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, your eyes will be opened, you'll be as God, knowing good and evil."** In other words, "Who needs God, or who needs to listen to Him, if you can be like Him, knowing what He knows? **Think for yourself!**"

**"In those days there was no king in Israel. Every man did the right in his own eyes" (Judges 21:25 MKJV).**

### Particle - Laying Down the Life or Not

I wondered, "Have I laid down my life, or have I resisted all the way and finally caved by kicking Sean out?" Then it occurred to me that with the threat of my wife leaving, the farm going down to

nothing, and the possibility of losing Jonathan by kicking Sean out, I was indeed laying down my life, though it may easily be interpreted as the opposite.

If it's true that God has surely been limited in blessing and will now be free to do so with our obedience, we'll see it eventually, even shortly. He's faithful and swift to reward and to replenish.

### Particle - Marilyn Talks

On the morning of June 14<sup>th</sup>, Marilyn wanted to talk and did so for over an hour, asking me to just listen, which I did. She thanked me for it, having seemed to express all that she desired.

She awoke wanting to talk about not throwing Sean out, saying that doing so was insanity. She wanted a month for Sean, and if I didn't see fruits that would satisfy, then he would go. Otherwise, things could be settled by this Sunday (four days hence), she would come home, leaving the farm to me and the Bensons.

She saw me as Nabal, an entirely unreasonable fool, and herself as Abigail, and she felt entirely justified in withdrawing if I kicked Sean out. She saw herself as more noble than Saul's son, Jonathan, who remained with his father and died on the battlefield with him.

She saw Sean as wise, virtuous, innocent, victimized, loyal, faithful, caring, understanding, and justified in all his ways. She saw me as unreasonable, foolish, unbelieving, striving, guilty, "insane" (referring to the "suicidal" foolishness of throwing Sean out), selfish, unjustified, a false prophet (she didn't believe my original [prophecies](#) for them all), and unappreciative of her, Sean, the Lord, and His blessings and provisions.

Oh, Sean makes mistakes - everyone does (I was surprised to hear that unusual concession from her mouth) - but in essence, you, Victor, *are* a mistake. And she would *only* say Sean makes mistakes or has faults when he has admitted to them, though she would never make that admission to me. If he says he's wrong on a minor point, she agreed. If he were to tell her he's God and come in secret to judge me, she would believe him. If he were to say, "Come with me; we are meant to be man and wife; forget and leave Victor," she would believe him and do so immediately - of that I had no doubt.

I had cause to doubt Marilyn would believe Sean, being that she, of all people, was familiar enough with the Scriptures and God's Law, but I'd seen her cast those away as soiled menstrual pads in His Name and in the name of faith. And I could do nothing to change that.

### Particle - Encouragement from Others

Trevor called, feeling to encourage me to stand strong and not waver or compromise because of perceived or threatened consequences. Mark received a letter from [Kumiko Konoshita](#) of Japan, who received words a few weeks before and held back till the night before. They seemed to be meant for our situation. She had to relay them. *"Don't let that which you are waiting for control you."* Kumiko also said that if there was something that I needed to do, do it without hesitation or debate.

On June 15<sup>th</sup>, I woke up troubled. Marilyn threatened me with leaving, and the farm would be left to us incompetents. I couldn't see it. I might have been speaking and acting out of passion, reacting to Marilyn's attitude and stance, thus kicking Sean out for the wrong reasons.

I wrote what came to me, but when the chips were down, I questioned, doubted, and feared. “Am I doing what God wants? Have I truly heard from Him? I have to admit that I don’t honestly know.”

When I talked to Lois and Mark, I told them I would prefer to leave things, to let Sean and Marilyn have their way, to not use force or exert my “authority,” which was perhaps not true authority. What was this - an ego issue? Maybe.

I saw Marilyn as a witch, but I also suspected that I couldn’t fight her on her terms. I thought I needed to let them have their way, their relationship, whatever they choose it to be, the farm management - just let them go, and Jonathan, too. Stop hanging on, forcing, insisting, striving. Was I copping out, or was I delaying dangerously? I honestly didn’t know. Was I now lost? I didn’t know. Unbelief stunts, stumps, and stuns.

### Particle - Another Long Talk with Sean

I decided to talk to Sean, as Marilyn repeatedly asked of me. She wanted me to hear where he was coming from. We talked and I listened and heard. For the first two to three hours, he spoke of what he believed and how he saw things. In the last one or two hours, I saw and articulated to him what the problem was - knowing no boundaries, not recognizing and acknowledging the inherent rights of various persons, authorities, and institutions.

“Whose wife is Marilyn?” I asked.

“I don’t know,” he replied.

“Therein is expressed your problem. If you had an understanding of God’s ways, Law, and authority, you would know whose wife she is. In presuming she is or may be yours, you commit adultery, not recognizing the boundaries of God established by the institution of marriage and its vows taken by the participants. That is lawlessness. If you don’t have a problem with the commandment, **‘Thou shalt not commit adultery,’** neither do you have a problem with, **‘Thou shalt not kill.’** This is iniquity - lawlessness.

“The children of iniquity, curiously enough, believed they were walking in faith and righteousness, and when calling on the Lord to let them in, they were told, **‘Depart from Me, you workers of iniquity; I never knew you.’** They had claimed powers and gifts of the Spirit and great works in the Lord’s Name and all was for nought. So is it with you, Sean,” I said.

I then pronounced a blessing on him to the effect that the Lord would enlighten him on His ways and laws and authority, delivering him.

In our midst have been fulfilled these words:

**“And he shall speak words against the Most High, and shall wear out the saints of the Most High, and plot to change times and laws. And they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and one-half time” (Daniel 7:25 MKJV).**

### Particle - Lois’ Dreams: Rebuking and Spanking Marilyn

On the night of June 15, 2000, Lois had two dreams, one of rebuking Marilyn, and another of taking her over her knee and spanking her. These dreams came to pass the next day. It was **88 days** before that I had the vision of Lois shooting the bear dead.

## Particle - The Enemy Resists and I Falter

On June 16<sup>th</sup>, we went to the farm to bring matters to a conclusion. Sean was once more called to repentance, as several times before, but there was no response. Marilyn was fighting, interfering, and interrupting. Lois rose up and put her in her place with a sharp rebuke. Surprisingly, Sean agreed with us in our judgment of Marilyn, contrary to her. What now?

It was [40 days before](#), on May 7<sup>th</sup>, that I addressed Sean as the enemy of all that is godly and good. Mark felt as though something concluded, and I felt that the power of evil was broken, though not convinced that Sean wouldn't be cast out. I hoped otherwise.

When going that day, I had expected to send Sean packing. Did I delay too long? Had I disobeyed the Lord? Did the enemy win because I faltered under Marilyn's threats? Maybe. Trevor said he felt something die the day before, and the Benson estate, over which he and Mark were battling in court, was now down the drain.

*"Lord, have I failed You and lost all? Has the enemy prevailed by my delay and hesitation? I was warned by Mark, Trevor, Kumiko, and perhaps Jonathan. I don't know what to think!"*

## Particle - One of the Most Frightening Days of My Life

I awoke on June 17<sup>th</sup> full of fear. Out loud, I cried, "I blew it! I failed! I disobeyed! Even as Saul, with sacrifice instead of obedience (1 Samuel 15)! I was commanded to kick Sean out long ago but Marilyn protested, pleading that I at least talk to him, which I did, the day before yesterday, the day Trevor said he felt all went dead."

I called Lois at the farm at 5:30 AM. Marilyn answered. I told her I lost everything because I had compromised, listening to her and talking to Sean. It was all gone. I was supposed to sacrifice everything. Instead, I halted and hung on, listening to the one to whom I gave control decades ago (her). Ironically, I was often castigating Paul for giving control of himself to women.

Lois called back and disagreed, pointing out where Trevor and Mark were coming from, saying that we had to take time, that God doesn't rush, that I had revelations and words on Sean, and that she had dreams on Marilyn that had been fulfilled. Mark had a good sense of conclusion, and Lois said she was thankful for what was happening.

In the evening, Marilyn returned home, happy-go-lucky, like she got her way and continued in the driver's seat. If anyone had been a scorner, I need only look to her. She surely seemed to enjoy seeing me in torment.

## Particle - Lois Receives Word for Me

On June 20<sup>th</sup>, Lois revealed that she had received a Word for me on Saturday the 17<sup>th</sup>. It was: *"The next time you are talking to Victor, tell him everything is right on track, and he has not denied Me; quite the contrary."*

## Particle - Benson Estate Concluded

On June 21, 2000, after long last, Trevor and Mark received a verdict in the Court of Queen's Bench in Calgary, concerning their [father's estate](#), terminating Carol Reesor's unacceptable and unpleasant hold as executrix on assets that were rightfully theirs. The female judge declared the mess of high legal costs to be Howard's fault because he foolishly hired a lawyer as executor of the estate, which he shouldn't have. She gave the boys a small remuneration for their trouble and effectively removed Reesor's power.

Reesor had spiritually, legally, and financially opposed us at every turn, utterly refusing to cooperate with us or understand our position. While we weren't entirely satisfied with the fact that she had milked the estate, we were glad it was over. Carol Reesor was also relieved, I think, though grudgingly so. That morning, before court, she suffered a break-in at her home - her car was broken into in her garage, with some items stolen, so she wasn't in the best of form in court against Trevor and Mark. Heaven was against her.

### *Who says there is no God?*

The boys had prayed as to what to say to, or ask of, the judge. They decided to declare to her that whatever she decided, they would accept as the judgment of God in the matter.

## **Page 15**

### **Particle - Seven Years, Quarter Million to One Million Prophecy Fulfilled**

The reader may recall that when Marilyn and I decided, in June of 1993, to enter the mutual funds market, [Marilyn heard](#), "*Quarter million to a million.*" We took it that the Lord was going to quadruple our investment and that He would do so in the mutuals or the stock market in general. We thought, "Wow! Quadruple? In how much time? After taxes? That is *really* something!" I had the thought it would be accomplished in seven years, which, on the stock market, made no sense.

At some point, Marilyn also prophesied that our losses in the stock market would be "penny-nickel" compared to the gains. Losses? What losses? When? Why losses? Furthermore, she prophesied that I would come to the place where I would care only about the Lord and His concerns, caring nothing for money.

Our investment went from \$280,000 to \$350,000 in less than a year, then by the end of 1994, dropped to a frightful \$250,000. We were devastated by the loss, especially when thinking we had heard from God on this matter and assuming He would prosper us. Thus began the quarter million prophesied, though we didn't know it at the time.

We were abused by our [brokers](#) (though not personally) who, while posing as caring and capable, were anything but; certainly not for us. They were simply hardnosed, self-serving, even cynical financiers after gain. They were sorely using us.

However, God had all this under full control. He used the whole process of mutuals to cure me of loving mammon. He gave me a severe spanking for whoring after gain, and he used these brokers and a sound defeat in the stock market to do it (they were His servants "for evil, for good"). I had entered that world of greed and fear, thinking that because I was a Christian, I could weather anything it threw at me. How wrong I was! I had no business whatsoever being there. "**But you, O man of God, flee these things,**" counseled Paul to Timothy (1 Timothy 6:10-11).

Play with fire and you get burned, especially if you are the Lord's.



But here is something even better than finding ourselves wrong and rebuked for it, which is good. I found some remarkable dates related to these events. It was on June 21, 1993 that we first spoke to [Bill Welton](#), the broker, about going into mutual investments. It was June 21, 2000 that the Benson estate was settled and technically, effectively handed over to Trevor and Mark. As you can see, these two events were exactly **7 years** apart to the day.

The estate being settled, we tallied our assets and found that whereas we began with a \$¼ million, we now had \$1 million in precisely **7 years**. Do you recall, reader, the [prophecy](#) I once had somewhere in the late 80's? The Lord said, *"I will destroy your enemy from off the face of the earth, you will look and see him no more, and I will give you his goods."*

In His mercy, even while chastening, God kept His promise and prospered us. There is nothing wrong with wealth. It is a matter of how one gets it, why one gets it, and what one does with it.

Through a remarkable sequence and combination of events, Trevor had been [sent packing](#) from our midst and thus happened to spend [some time](#) in a motel in BC during a snowstorm where his father chanced to be. After some reconciliation, Trevor and Mark were reinstated in Howard's will. They had been excluded from the will because of their involvement with me, whom Howard condemned as a religious fanatic, and he swore Lois would receive nothing of the estate if he could possibly help it. Because I had expelled Trevor, Howard then saw him as acceptable to reinstate in the will, along with Mark, who was still in Japan.

And all this came by Carol Reesor's suggestion to Howard that he reinstate his older sons, which she said she later regretted when it turned out that Jason, the youngest, received nothing because [killing his father](#). All was left to the wife Howard hated and a "cult," namely yours truly, through Mark and Trevor, who returned to be with us.

Who can possibly argue that these events aren't divinely ordained? Who can argue that I haven't been hearing from God or that God isn't with me? Who can argue that God doesn't keep His Word? Who can argue that he or she is in control of anything?

Dear reader, we are in control of nothing - not including people in our midst, not excluding them (as I did Trevor), not snowstorms or any weather, not times, motels, wills, choice of executors, sizes of estates, stock markets, courts, sentences from a judge's mouth, gain, loss, prosperity, not anything.

Would you like more? More you shall have! The day Carol Reesor's grip on the estate was broken was **3 years** precisely to the day I met her at Ferintosh, AB, when she coldly met us. You will also recall that the day Howard was slain was **9 years** to the day of the signing of the [divorce papers](#) with Lois. This June 21<sup>st</sup> day of 2000 is also **88 days** after the **3½ year** anniversary (March 24<sup>th</sup>) of Marilyn's prophecy.

Was it not Shakespeare who once wrote, "All the world is a stage and we are merely actors"? Surely, this is so! His knowledge, understanding of human nature, laws of the universe, and skills have often amazed and delighted me.

But perhaps an even more awesome timing is about to be unveiled. Those who argue against the existence of God have some explaining to do. Just you wait.

***Who says there is no God?***

## Particle - Some Reason for Respecting Marilyn

Given true prophecies and visions Marilyn had, and often good counsel, one can see, at least in part, why I would have solemnly respected her and her perspective. I, however, am not at all saying I was justified in looking to her as to God.

Then things changed. Along came a devil, the seducer, the subtle beast. Marilyn rejected her head and, falling, prophesied both true and false. She gave herself over to all evil and was now degenerated to a loathsome creature full of venom, despising all things godly, righteous, true, holy, and pure. Sean, as a deceitful angel, was of the same mind and will. And the two hadn't repented. They only tempered the expression of their thoughts in order to further their ambitions. And so it had to be.

## Particle - The Hagedorns Sever Relations

On June 22<sup>nd</sup>, I wrote [Marcia Hagedorn](#) and delivered the letter to their trailer at the back of our Moon River property. It was a friendly letter but spoke of judgment (correction) and even severity to come. I liked to think I wrote it in order that she and her husband might know the Lord and represent Him as He is, no sitting on the fence, but I think I wrote it because she wasn't acknowledging my station in the Lord. Marcia didn't like the letter at all and broke off any contact with me thereafter.

"With the prophecy I gave them, they will immediately go to Bill Roycroft for comfort and counsel. They will reject and avoid me like the plague (which always hurts), and Roycroft will smoothly lead them down a garden path of reassurance, thus in the sweetest and most 'Christian' of ways, condemn me as a false prophet. So often has such occurred, and I have had to go on, while those who withstood me perished or suffered those things prophesied of them."

## Particle - I Walk in the Fire

Concerned about Hagedorn's reaction, I recalled that Marcia had lied to me. She played games. When I was concerned that I had inflicted unwarranted fear in them, the Lord told me not to respect the fearful. Marcia's friendliness had been somewhat put on.

I am in the Fire; I live and walk in the Fire; this is Judgment Day, the *"Day of the Lord, great for the righteous and terrible for the wicked."* Of course, there's going to be fear upon the fearful and the wicked and upon those who live carelessly, who vainly profess that they know, love, and serve God. This is the hour of trial, reckoning, and exposure. The fire comes to reveal and to purge. Reality to the unreal is a fearful thing.

They didn't expect to come in contact with God, Who comes in me. They have stumbled on the Stone rejected by the builders of the kingdoms of this world. They have been led to believe men of God to be other than as they are and are therefore shocked to meet a real one. They're afraid, and only in genuine faith and repentance is there hope for their redemption.

## Particle - Voting in Politics

Was it my place to vote? Many would say that it is, that the privilege was purchased with the blood of our nation's soldiers fighting for democratic freedom. I'd been debating whether or not I should

vote for [Preston Manning](#), who was running against Stockwell Day for the leadership of the Canadian Alliance Party of Canada.

I saw Stockwell as somewhat disingenuous, a bit of a braggart and showoff, unlike Preston, though he professed faith in Christ (as did Preston). Day boasted of having balanced the Alberta provincial budget and cutting taxes as qualifications and proof of his abilities, but were those accomplishments worth respecting when the Alberta government was awash in oil revenues? Preston didn't strike me as one who would cite such points to promote himself.

I ended up voting for Preston, and he lost. What did that say about God's will for me in voting? I considered this matter for some time and would, by God's grace, come to a conclusion.

### Particle - Honor and Dishonor

I see politicians and so-called Christian ministers who command respect with people. They know how to handle themselves and others. They are well spoken, well groomed, well dressed, sociable, classy, and often popular. Yet I look again and I see unrighteousness, pride, presumption, vanity - and their words are hollow.

Then I think, "Am I critical? Am I suffering a bad case of Sour Grape Syndrome? Are not all men in wrongness, including me? How then shall I criticize?" But God many times before has chosen vessels of honor and of dishonor and arranged them one against the other, the vessels of honor being very few and those of dishonor being very many. Those of honor before God are dishonored by men and those of dishonor among men for His Name's sake are greatly honored by God.

### Particle - Believe

I was troubled, not knowing what to do. The Lord spoke, saying, "*Believe.*"

### Particle - Three Witnesses Speak at Once

On June 29<sup>th</sup>, Les Mills came to talk. He told me of the problems his sons, Craig and Grant, were having. I candidly told him I was so frustrated, wishing I could help him, his sons, the Knorrs, and others. Les said to me, "You know how I see you? As a man who has the goods and nobody wants them." (He meant it as a "positive negative," in that he said, "I'm not trying to build you up or anything.")

As we visited, Jonathan called from the farm, saying, "Dad, I think I just had a prophecy: *'There is a king over a kingdom, over the land, but there are no people in the kingdom, in the land.'*"

Only half an hour earlier, Marilyn had heard these words about me: "*I will put him in his place.*" I took those words as negative, coming from her own fretting heart, but now I see them as a possible positive prophecy from God.

I was then reminded of a [poem](#) I had written in 1991, saying that all I see around me are paupers - diseased, starving, and naked - while I had great wealth and nobody to share it with.

### Particle - RCMP Drug Dealers in Stettler

Les informed me that he had been talking to an RCMP officer in Yorkton, SK, who told him (inadvertently, it might seem) that, six weeks prior, RCMP officers in Stettler, AB were found to be drug dealers. This served to confirm, from an entirely independent source, what [Jason Benson](#) had told us three years earlier about his father being in league with an RCMP constable and perhaps other RCMP officers, importing marijuana from BC and dealing it.

### **Particle - Les Mills Headed to Judgment**

Les told me he and his family had finally purchased another farm operation, this time in Jansen, Saskatchewan. I was quite disappointed, having hoped for better things and directions for them. They are going for loss, failure, judgment, suffering, and correction.

### **Particle - Bob Fife Arrives**

Upon our request, Bob Fife flew out from Toronto to participate in sorting out matters with Sean, Marilyn, and the rest of us.

I talked to Bob about his possible culpability in our situation, not to deflect blame from any of us, but because, as a parent, he left his wife for men when Sean was but a toddler, which, I believed, had an impact on Sean. He read [Man of Sin 2](#), the [letter](#) of changing authority at the farm, and the February 1998 [prophecies](#). I told him I believed Sean was a sociopath, having but a conscience of convenience, not recognizing rights and differences, and not respecting the authorities of others.

### **Particle - Jonathan's Vision: Eight Lights Lining Up**

On July 1, 2000, when Bob Fife had come for Sean, Jonathan had a vision. He saw six light yellow "fluorescent" lights joined together and two dark red ones joined, but separated from the six. He said the six light yellow were good, the two red bad or evil, that the six good were him, the Bensons, Bob, and me, while the two evil were Marilyn and Sean. He told us this vision. Then, on the way home, with Marilyn, more came. He said the two red were once black but were changing, on their way to white... hope, redemption in process.

He also had a prophecy on July 2<sup>nd</sup>: *"We tend to take the belt off to tighten the pulley bolts but we needn't take off the belt; just tighten the bolts."*

As with most prophecies, I had no idea what it meant.

### **Particle - Confirmations of Origin of My Surname**

For some landscaping, I needed gravel, which was delivered on July 4<sup>th</sup> by Mikola Ponomar, a Ukrainian truck driver of MP Crushing. He commented on my name and where "chuks" came from (the western part of Ukraine). His origin was Cossack. He said that my part of Ukraine belonged to Romania from approximately 1920 until 1940. The town of my area was Buchovania. He also said his mother's name was Ahafya, which I believe is from the Greek, "Agatha"; this was an apparent further confirmation of what I discovered of [my name](#).

### **Particle - Talk with Bob Fife**

Bob spent the day with me, helping with the landscaping and talking. I shared many things with him - doctrines, Scriptures, and things that were happening with us. I talked to him about Audrey, his past, the impact on Sean, and the possibility of reuniting with Audrey in full repentance of the

past. He was open and desirous to make restitution in any way possible. When he talked to Audrey, she rejected their reuniting. Bob left it at that.

He marveled at Sean's hardness, which he saw for himself. He wanted to have a good talk with him and wanted me to come to the farm and talk things over with everyone.

### Particle - Sean Digs in His Heels

On July 6<sup>th</sup>, Sean informed me that on the 12<sup>th</sup> day of his fast (he had been fasting in his turmoil), he received that he was to believe the prophecy. He told me I didn't believe the prophecy because I was in unbelief or was in unbelief because I didn't believe the prophecy. He was at his arrogant best. Trevor, Mark, Lois, Bob, and I withstood him, but it was of no use. Marilyn was so impressed as to be moved to tears by Sean's stance. She said she heard, "Nothing will happen today, and God is judge." Bob flew back to Toronto on the 7<sup>th</sup>.

Sean still remained, and we struggled to know what to do. The Bensons and I talked. Trevor counseled that I no longer wait to kick Sean out. None of us felt there was any choice but to send him away. This was so strange; I was so reluctant, and I didn't see that I could *"let it happen"* any longer, that is, I believed I would be grieving the Lord if I waited any longer.

### Particle - A Blessing for Mark

On the night of July 7<sup>th</sup>, I had a blessing for Mark. I declared peace and rest, as a little boy curled up in his Father's lap, to relax, trust, and not try to do and be, but to trust comfortably, to let his Dad stroke his head.

Mark didn't believe or receive these words with his mind. He continued to labor, but the Word went directly to his spirit and would effect that for which it was intended.

### Particle - Be Honest, John

On July 8<sup>th</sup>, I was given to man our Harvest Haven booth at Coaldale "Settler Days" with Mark. We found ourselves next to [John Schussler](#) and his marketing manager, Gerald Anderson, who were promoting Bridge Berry Farm jams.

I red the label on their jams, which said, "Made with all-natural products." Having written to John about this in 1998, I reminded him of that [letter](#). They were promoting their jams with the suggestion their product was entirely healthy for the consumer. But was it? John used conventional herbicide to kill weeds in his berry orchards and bleached, refined sugar in his jams. The label was true, but it was misleading. Yes, the saskatoons were "all-natural," but that was about it. Other less desirable elements were there and the label didn't say they were, referring only to that ingredient the people would be motivated to buy.

When I suggested to them that the labeling was misleading to the consumer, the marketing manager, a Mormon fellow, knowing I was a believer, immediately used a diversion tactic and quoted Scripture, which seemed disconnected from the subject at hand. They weren't about to listen to me. Their agenda wasn't to produce wholesome food or to be perfectly honest with consumers. It was to make sales and profits, period.

At some time I had said to John that he needed to do things right, that is, organically, and that he needed to be honest with people. Anything else would not work. He ignored me. We would see

where John's enterprise would take him or, more accurately, where the Lord would take him and his business.

### Particle - Marilyn's Sexual Confessions to Sean

Trevor called to tell me that Satan himself was who Sean was. This agreed with all that I had received, that devils dwelled in him and that he was the enemy of all that was holy and good. There was the prophecy that Sean would go out as a devil, and he denied my right to life in any capacity, even as a person.

Then Lois informed me Marilyn had confided to Sean of her sexual life before she became a believer. This woman was so vile, she would stop at nothing in her degeneracy. But why the surprise? Does the saint expect virtue from Satan's bride?

### Particle - Finally Firm with Marilyn

Today, on July 10, 2000, the third anniversary of my [covenant](#) with God to lay down my life, Marilyn was exceptionally impudent, antagonistic, sarcastic, angry, insulting, and blasphemous. "I'm all wrong," she snarled.

"Yes, you are!" I replied (at one time I wouldn't have admitted or declared it so).

"You have all the answers," she retorted.

"Yes, I do," I replied with perfect frankness and conviction.

"I'm nothing but a wicked bitch," she returns.

"Yes, you are," I responded.

"I'm condemned!" she cried.

"Yes, you are," I answered, not because I condemned her, but because if one is in sin, one is condemned: **"There is... no condemnation to those who don't walk in the flesh."** If one walks in the flesh, which she did, then there must be condemnation.

"God is judge," she declared.

"Yes, He is, and that's what He's now doing; I sit on the throne with Him," I declared. I gave her verses to read, but she angrily refused them. They were Proverbs 9:8; 10:17; 12:1; 15:5, 10, 12, 31, and 29:1.

**"Do not reprove a scorner, lest he hate you; give to a wise man, and he will love you" (Proverbs 9:8 MKJV).**

**"He who keeps instruction is in the way of life; but he who refuses reproof goes astray" (Proverbs 10:17 MKJV).**

**"Whoever loves instruction loves knowledge; but he who hates correction is like a brute animal" (Proverbs 12:1 MKJV).**



**“A fool despises his father's instruction, but he who listens to correction is wise” (Proverbs 15:5 MKJV).**

**“Correction is grievous to him who forsakes the way; he who hates reproof shall die” (Proverbs 15:10 MKJV).**

**“A scorner does not love one who corrects him, nor will he go to the wise” (Proverbs 15:12 MKJV).**

**“The ear that hears the reproof of life shall remain among the wise” (Proverbs 15:31 MKJV).**

**“A man who hardens his neck when reproved shall be suddenly broken, and there will be no healing” (Proverbs 29:1 MKJV).**

### **Particle - Bullet Dies**

We had a Pyrenees sheep dog, Bullet, which Sean personally seized responsibility for caring. He once said it was like a son to him. Sean called to tell me that on this day, July 10<sup>th</sup>, it mysteriously died. Marilyn and Sean blamed Mark and me for it. The Bensons suspected it was poisoned by the neighbors. They had repeatedly warned Sean not to let Bullet wander, and he ignored their warnings, as with all else.

Trevor declared the death of the dog a warning to Sean that the Lord could have taken Sean. How did the dog really die? Trevor and Jonathan said God took him.

Sean grew bolder and more arrogant each day, and he and Marilyn were incorrigible. The Bensons and I were greatly grieved and knew the time drew near. On July 15<sup>th</sup>, Jonathan prophesied, *“Cast out the devil, and you shall have peace.”*

This death was **88 days** after the Lord revealed to me that Trevor had [surrendered](#) his will to Sean. It was also **88 days** after the second anniversary of the boulders [vision](#).

### **Particle - A Prophecy of Paul Fulfilled**

I tried to write Paul a letter. As I sat thinking, I realized a prophecy I had for him years before had come to pass. The Lord [said](#) He would hook him by the nose and lead him back where he came from. I found Paul in an [illegitimate marriage](#), crying out to God, in Israel, for deliverance. I came, sent by God, and he was delivered.

But he continued, set on a wife all these years until the Lord gave him over to [Kerri](#) (the “dark one”), and now he was in an illegitimate marriage (fornication) once again. When he chose to marry Kerri, I told him that she would lead him around by the nose as she pleased, that he would be under her power, and so it was. At the time, I hadn’t made the connection to the prophecy.

### **Particle - Enter Pascal Gregoire**

Pascal Gregoire, an immigrant from Belgium living in Raymond, Alberta, came to Harvest Haven looking for organic food and work. He had a striking resemblance to Rowan Atkinson, the actor playing “Mr. Bean.” Mark brought him to Henderson Lake Park where we met to talk about spiritual matters, which Pascal was enquiring about. I had four things to say to him at the visit:

- 1) God comes before all else;
- 2) He will provide [Pascal and his wife, Ingrid, were feeling the pressures of financial needs with two toddler children (*twins*) and another coming];
- 3) the solution is not in self-devised circumstances [he was focused on self-sufficiency];
- 4) God is sovereign over all things, both good and evil.

I believed Pascal might have to forsake his wife, because I didn't believe theirs was a marriage made in Heaven. Her parents were opposed to it, and she was in rebellion to them.

Mark, Jonathan, and I visited them on the 18<sup>th</sup> of July and I spoke to them of their duty toward their parents and how they needed to make amends, having married against their wishes.

### Particle - Marilyn's Vision: A Silver Candlestick

Perhaps some time in this month, Marilyn had a vision. In it she saw a silver candlestick, standing by itself, surrounded by sand, which was collapsing. All in the world was collapsing except for the candlestick, which Marilyn took to represent the Lord. I believe the candlestick represented the work of the Lord, the work He was doing with us; that which was not of Him wouldn't survive the fiery trial.

### Particle - "Do It Yourself"

I was hoping the Lord would deal with Marilyn and Sean. I asked the Lord to take Sean out. Lois suggested she would do it. Bob Fife was urging *me* to do it. I also thought Marilyn would have to do it, given the [dream](#) she had, wherein she was, in the Name of Jesus Christ, commanding the trespasser, who was making himself comfortable and bewitching all of us, to leave.

So many times, when faced with certain people with whom I had a conflict or who I knew needed to be told something, I would pray and ask the Lord to do something or speak to them. Invariably, He would say, "*What do you think I have you for?*" Jonathan had another prophecy, and it was, "*You kick him out.*" I knew it was up to me.

### Particle - A Trip to Cranbrook, BC

Jonathan and I took a trip to the mountains and decided to drive to Cranbrook, BC where Evan Yurkoski lived. We got to know him somewhat over the past year. He was paranoid and dreadfully caught up in conspiracy theories, imagining he was being followed, wiretapped, and surveilled by the RCMP and the Illuminati. He refused to have anything to do with the internet for fear of being monitored and did various things to act the clandestine, courageous, sacrificial, pious, clever fugitive from widespread high-powered tyranny and injustice.

Evan had a compulsion to push his beliefs on people. He reveled in making hundreds of copies of VHS tapes from *The Prophecy Club* and other sources, dealing mainly in conspiracy theories, and handing them out to anyone who would take them.

It was rather obvious Evan's wife, Bernice, and their children, Cherie and Jason, were ashamed, contemptuous, and cynical of him, and scarcely withheld expressing their feelings before us. (Cherie had a set of nine-month-old *twins*.)

Evan took his wife's attitude with offense and called her a "Jezebel spirit," never to her face (at least not in our presence), but privately. To us, she was quite friendly, treating us as guests, though she didn't profess faith in Christ. Evan didn't seem capable of holding down a job while Bernice, a registered nurse, appeared the stable breadwinner of the home and paid the bills. He took advantage of "Jezebel's" occupational dental program when he needed a dentist.

Evan wanted me to meet a fellow at a restaurant who was very much into conspiracies, reading ominous messages into so many things in everyday life. His name was David Olynick and he happened to be originally from my home town, Dauphin, Manitoba. I had gone to school with his younger *twin* brothers, Jack and Jim. David seemed to have found his reason for living as the discernor of the evils closing in on all of us and the watchman warning all. What were we supposed to do about the encroaching evil empire? He didn't know.

### **Particle - Escape from the One World Government**

So many people think they can prepare for when the widely-expected, tyrannical One World Government takes over by finding some end-time farm or moving to the wilderness and living off the land. Some think Canada is the place to be, some South Africa, Israel, Papua New Guinea, Costa Rica, or Montana.

Why doesn't it occur to them that there's nowhere to hide? Who will protect them? Where will they get their supplies? If farming is an option, will they know how? Olynick and Evan had no inclination to place their faith in God, Who alone can be a sure refuge. They didn't have a clue!

### **Particle - The Summons and the Time**

We stayed an extra day with the Yurkoskis, partially because Jonathan wished to and partially because I didn't feel free to leave.

On July 22<sup>nd</sup>, Lois called, crying (I was expecting a call). "He goes [meaning Sean] or we go." She wasn't giving me an ultimatum, but simply declaring that they couldn't take the trouble anymore. Sean, she said, was riding high, barking orders, tyrannizing them, while Marilyn supported him. At that moment, something settled in my heart and I vowed the time had come. I would be returning, likely today, and things would be taken care of, once for all. I said, "Lois, be at peace. I understand, and I'll take care of it, be assured."

I discussed the matter with Evan. He had a Word for me, that there would be victory and peace (words to that effect). Bob Fife also called Lois and said, "Sean has to go." He was prepared to come and get him.

### **Particle - Jonathan's Prophecy: Kick Him Out Now**

Within hours, Jonathan and I headed back to Lethbridge. Moon River Estates, our home, comes up about 35 minutes before the farm as we head east. It was getting late, approaching 9 PM and Jonathan's bedtime. I wondered if we should go home, have some rest, and go to the farm in the morning to deal with Sean. "No, Dad, we need to go to the farm and kick Sean out now," Jonathan insisted.

“Son, are you sure? Is that the Lord telling you that?” I asked. “There’s no need to hurry. We can go home, get a good night’s sleep, and head to the farm tomorrow morning.”

“No, Dad. I feel very strongly that we have to do it now. We can’t wait.”

I again reminded him of the possible repercussions, like Marilyn leaving, but Jonathan remained firm. We arrived at the farm close to 9:30 PM. Marilyn immediately led me to the corral where was a rarity, an identical set of calves, *twins*.

## ***Page 16***

### **Particle - In Timing Square**

I told Marilyn I wanted to gather everyone together to talk. We tried getting together at the corral, but the twin calves were bawling noisily, so we went to the garden shop. It was uncomfortably warm there, so we stepped out into the square and began to talk. I asked Lois, Trevor, Mark, and Sean to publicly express to me what they were thinking and feeling. Lois declared that they were ready to leave, that they could no longer bear Sean’s conduct with them. The Bensons were frustrated. I found Lois faltering, however, almost fearful, and she gave me little in the way of substance or specifics to back her standpoint. Mark and Trevor said very little.

I then asked Sean what he thought and felt about everything. He stood there in his usual manner, the perfect victim, innocent, with little to say, primarily giving the impression that he was right in all and they were judging him unfairly. I was momentarily stumped. It seemed, by appearances, that the Bensons were selfish whiners and Sean stood there, as if to say, “What’s all the fuss about? I’m looking out for everyone’s good and I’m confident in what I’m doing! I have nothing against them like they do against me.”

I stood there, doubting, wondering what I should do. “Am I wrong about Sean? Is Marilyn right after all? Is he innocent and simply despised by the Bensons?” I asked myself, “What if I’m wrong? What if the Bensons are wrong?” I well knew *they* were no angels. As I stood there quietly, I suddenly decided I had to ignore appearance, believe the “hidden evidence,” and do what I had to do. I said, “Sean, you have to leave.”

Marilyn suddenly and angrily blurted out, “I’m leaving!” (She meant she would be leaving the farm and me with it.) I promptly replied, “Go. If you want to go, you go, but he *goes*.” Marilyn stormed off to the garden shop.

I turned to Sean and spoke these words: “Satan, you are finished. I rebuke you, bind your power, and command you to leave, in Jesus’ Name!” Sean stood there, silent, if not stunned; I couldn’t tell his thoughts and feelings.

Jonathan was a few yards behind me and suddenly cried out, “Dad! Dad! When you rebuked Satan and bound his power, something happened to me! I’m free! There was this heavy weight pressing on me for a long time, but now it’s gone, and I feel really good!”

I turned to lay my hands on Jonathan’s head and pray for him against the powers of darkness, but he wouldn’t allow me. “Dad, no, you don’t understand! You don’t have to do anything! I’m free! I’m okay!”

I took Sean to the house and demanded of him all farm credit cards and any other vestiges of power or authority or ability to influence us in any way, not that I really felt he would do anything illegal to us - he wasn't one to do such. I told him he needed to pack and leave as soon as possible; I gave him a one-week deadline.

We had just tended to these matters when a strange and furious storm arose suddenly, there having been not a cloud in the sky. A raging wind lifted shale dust from the square, and not only dust, but stones were lifted into the air, which flew northward past the garden shop and the tall poplars in the back yard. I don't recall ever seeing fifty-foot-tall poplar trees bending as they did, at almost a 45-degree angle. I thought surely they would snap. How could they bend so much without breaking?

There were two great cottonwoods nearest the house (there are several dozen on the property, scattered over ten acres or so); each lost a large branch in the fierce wind; the rest lost none. There was no rain. The wind receded as fast as it had come. In 15 to 30 minutes, it was all over. The Bensons and I watched the strange and dramatic storm from the deck of the house and weren't afraid. We all felt a sudden cleanliness, comfort, and freedom.

### **Particle - Paul with Us that Night**

Then Lois, Mark, Trevor, and I did a strange thing, given the circumstances and the late hour (nearly midnight). Still marveling at the sudden storm, we headed into the house, went to the study and onto the computer. Lo and behold, there was a surprise letter waiting from Paul. I hadn't heard from him in nearly two years. He was responding to a [letter](#) I wrote him perhaps a week or two before, expressing my thoughts and feelings to him.

The tone of my letter was congenial. I told him the Lord had been doing great things for me. I also asked him why he walked away and remained away in bitterness. It was open-ended, leaving it up to him as to what to do. We were amazed at what Paul had to say, particularly in our present circumstances.

### **Particle - The Enemy Removed**

Paul's letter, with irrelevant material omitted:

Greetings Victor,

I praise God that you are alive and well, in body, soul, and spirit. While I knew somewhat of your wellbeing from Lois' phone call to Kerri, now I know more. It is indeed very good to hear of **what the Lord has done for you**.

I was reminded, while reading your letter, of the Beatles documentary on TV several years ago. At one point, one of the Beatles recounted how left out he felt, towards the difficult ending days of their relationship, while the others were apparently getting along. When sharing this with one of the others, he found the other expressing the exact same feeling! What particularly triggered the memory of this incident was where you said in your letter that you were "deeply disturbed by your [my] abandonment and as I've [you've] seen it, betrayal." I have had exactly the same feelings concerning you! However, the Lord has been gracious, and I believe we can both rejoice in the marvelous work He is accomplishing.

After we last spoke almost two years ago, I believe it was on August 8<sup>th</sup> of '98, I had two visions one week later, on two consecutive days, at almost the exact same time of day. The first was of Kerri. I saw her in a prone position, arms folded over her chest, eyes closed, something similar to a funeral viewing. I asked the Lord what this meant and immediately heard the words, *"Submission to the will of God."*

The next day I saw at first, in my vision, what appeared to be the scene depicted in the Scripture where the Lord was abused before being crucified. However, it was me being led away. There was a second part to the vision, immediately following, wherein I saw Sean sitting, leaning forward, with a determined look (I'm not sure this word exactly describes his demeanor), with a crown on his head signifying he was the ruling authority calling for my death.

Shortly after these visions, I don't remember exactly when, I asked the Lord one evening, upon retiring, to show me what exactly was going on. That night I dreamed, and in my dream I was working at Davis Business Machines. Some new salesperson from another office was accusing me of all types of wrongdoing towards the company, not in negligence either, but in intention. Amazingly to me, Loren was disturbed and somewhat believing of the canards. In fact, when I tried to defend myself it only heaped more suspicion on me. My conscience, though, was clear, and it was also clear that I needed to remain silent and just "let it happen."

After this dream it became a lot easier for me to accept what I saw as your betrayal of me, as the Lord determined it. I also hadn't ascribed any bad intention on your behalf, nor had I ever believed this. I believe I knew your spirit, and still do.

Perhaps you remember that during the time Kerri was sent away, the first time in the summer of '97, the Lord spoke to me. He told me He had sent Sean among us to divide us, to purge us of other gods and idols. It was the most joyful revelation, words, or dream I had ever received. There was such joy in Heaven overflowing to me in this revelation. Perhaps the sweetness of the promise is always followed, in corresponding measure, by the bitterness of the experience. It has been hard, no doubt, for everyone. But I believe the joy of the revelation was due to the finality and glory of the work the Lord was accomplishing in us. He was very pleased, and it couldn't be dimmed a whit by the hardness of the present circumstance.

Victor, I don't believe I ever said I was your enemy. Nor do I believe I ever have been. I believe the Word of the Lord to Marilyn (Israel, 1979), that I was a friend, has never been broached. What I believe I did say was that I hated you. It occurred to me that I had hated your doubting, constant obsessing, backpedaling, kindness followed by gross insensitivity, and your quickness at times to anger. By extension, I hated you. When I saw and admitted this, I felt it was a step forward. I likened it to when you admitted you had hated God. Instead for you, it was as though I had indeed betrayed you and was your enemy. I never did see it that way, nor do I now.

However, there has been a problem. My great idol has been you. As you have said, the idolater serves himself, not the idol. I wasn't right with God in this. I didn't truly love you, while serving myself. Certainly what God had planted was there, and His Word stands. But I must admit I'm ashamed that I couldn't stand up to you and tell you the truth, recognizing you as a human being, as well as a servant of God.



O Victor, we have hardly begun to know one another. Forgive me for my craven idolatry, denying your humanity and my own. As for your status as a servant of the Lord, you will hear more on this as you read on....

Now, I regret that I have not sent you the following two items beforehand. I began to, and considered it many times, but didn't know what else to say, where to begin, etc. I felt somewhat imperious sending you something with no explanation. On **November 11, 1998** [my emphasis, not Paul's], I was moved to write down the following, which I felt was for you primarily, though for the others and myself, as well:

*"You will know when the enemy is gone. There will be no guessing or wondering; clearness will prevail like a cloudless morning when the sun rises and shines in glory, all being seen and known in the light of day. It has been the long dark night, by My design it is so and seen in all of creation. Now you will know, even as I have known you in dire extremity. Even now you know the strangeness of My acts is with perfect precision and design, the myriad intertwining of all things for good. Be at rest and do not fear."*

The second thing is that I did call Bernalillo, as you requested, but they never got back to me about the **warrior twins** [my emphasis again]. However, I did find a book that gave the following information:

The Sun Father has children by mortal woman, and some of his offspring can travel a rainbow from this world to the house of the Sun and back again at will. The little **war twins** [my emphasis] are such spirits.

These twins were known as powerful sons of the Sun, and leaders of the people at the time of their emergence, and protectors from outlandish foes. Though twins, there actually was an elder and a younger. They are a pair, not of identical spirits, but more often of opposites. In the stories there is often the theme of the elder brother who makes the first attempt, but fails, and then the younger brother succeeds.

For example, in a test of carrying the Sun across the sky the younger brother had to push the elder into a monster's jaws to succeed in getting the Sun to set, because the elder was afraid.

Despite the fact that they seem to have been conceived in the upper world, they are the ones who lead the people from the underworld.

In one Indian dialect their names mean Son of the Sun (elder) and Water-Dripping Son.

The twins undergo a series of Herculean adventures. [My note: Did you know that Hercules represented Shem, son of Noah, whose great power in God defeated Nimrod?] They go in search of their father and are tested by water and fire, finally acknowledged to be true sons. They end up in the underworld. Leading the emergence of the people. Thereafter they kill various monsters that have been plaguing the human race.

Sandia (Turtle) Mountain is the "home of the war twins."

There is much more, I am sure, that could be said, and hopefully, Lord willing, we will have opportunity to engage. It is good enough for me that you are well, in the truest sense of the word. Of course I forgive you, it all has been for good. I have not been bitter, brother. The Lord showed me that I had been bitter concerning Sierra and, by extension, towards you as the messenger. That is over. Please forgive me. I know you were not asking for such, but this is all true.

One more thing: Kerri was disturbed that Marilyn was happy about us being together as consolation. Kerri said something to the effect that our lives are expendable so that she (Marilyn) might keep her fantasy. It sounds harsh and perhaps obtuse in reasoning, but I understand and agree. I asked Kerri if she was angry with Marilyn. She said no, she feels sad for her. I believe our spirits are correct towards all.

### **Particle - God's Timing**

There I was, rebuking Satan in the square, late in the evening. We had tried to talk by the corral and indoors, but neither was suitable. Rebuking the enemy in the square had happened once before. On August 12, 1996, I had rebuked the powers of spiritual darkness over the farm and cast the red shale dust, upon which we were standing, into the air. The two events were exactly **1440 days** apart, to the hour - **12 X 12 X 10**, or **360 X 4**, **four Hebrew years** precisely.

This event occurred **40 days** after sending my letter to the farm on June 13<sup>th</sup>, notifying Sean he was to leave.

As if that wasn't enough, Paul prophesied words that would be fulfilled this night, but he had them nearly two years earlier and, as he said, didn't share them with me. Why? Because, beyond his knowledge or understanding, we needed to read them on the night of the removal of the enemy. When had he received those words? It was on **November 11, 1998**, the day I had declared, "I am finished with the prophecy."

### ***Who says there is no God?***

### **Particle - Jonathan's Three Dreams: Sean Dying**

In the night of July 22, 2000, Jonathan dreamt three times that Sean died. He told Marilyn, thinking nothing of them, and she told me.

(At some point, in relation to my vision, which could also be tied to Jonathan's dreams, it was revealed to me that Marilyn had killed Sean, in trying to form him into the kind of person she hoped to have for a god and husband. He followed and obeyed her faithfully against me, disregarding me as owner of the farm, as husband to Marilyn, as an elder in the Lord, as a brother in Christ, and, yes, as a human being. He once said that the sooner I died, the better.)

### **Particle - Seven Sets of Twins in Seven Days**

In the past short while, twins were showing up from every direction:

**One**, the Gregoires, whom we met with four days earlier, had a set of twins.

**Two**, Evan's daughter, in Cranbrook, had a set of twins.

**Three**, I had known Jack and Jim, the twin brothers of the man to whom Evan introduced me, Dave Olynick.

**Four**, the Sorgards, acquaintances, came to the farm with twins.

**Five**, upon our arriving at the farm, Marilyn almost immediately led me to the new twin calves, which are very uncommon.

**Six**, Trevor called the next day to tell me an irrigation wheel move wouldn't work. He then took the twin engine from another move where it wasn't needed, which we were fortunate to have.

**Seven**, Paul's letter with mention of the legendary war twins, with whom he and I have found remarkable similarities and coincidences.

Why all the twins within a week, when one can go for months without so much as one set, I don't know. I believe the Lord was giving two witnesses to His sovereignty over all things - earthly, beastly, human, mechanical, heavenly, past, present, and future.

### Particle - The Warrior Twins

Consider the warrior twins of the legend of Sandia Mountain, a.k.a. the Gemini Twins/Castor and Pollux, the twins that are prophesied to usher in a new age - the two witnesses of Revelation 11, the two olive trees of Zechariah, all these being the selfsame twins.

The enemy was removed and Paul's prophecy was unveiled, nearly two years after he received it, declaring the removal of the enemy and our coming together for the work to which God called us many years ago.

Total strangers on several occasions have taken notice of Paul and me, asking if we were brothers or somehow related. Now here was one "twin" speaking to the other in perfect timing, referring to the enemy being removed the day he was removed, that we might now come together.

### Particle - Various Fallout

On July 23<sup>rd</sup>, I called Bob Fife and asked that he come to get Sean. Sean's mother, Audrey Goff, was upset; she blamed us for the affair and sided with Sean. Jonathan cried and feared; he had to come to terms with it, as well. He said he received that "*Mom must leave,*" perhaps only for a while, he said. While Sean didn't really believe he had to go, the Bensons were urging him to pack or threatening to pack for him. Marilyn insisted on proposals of separation, and I agreed with her. Upon hearing of Jonathan's dreams of Sean dying, she said, "He *is* dying," blaming me, saying I was *sooo* wrong.

### Particle - Another and Great Twin of Sorts

Sometime after this momentous occasion, I was watching *Touched By An Angel*. In this particular episode, which originally aired, I am told, on March 8, 1998, Michael Chiklis played a timid baker named Matt Coletti, who witnessed a crime outside his shop, perpetrated by two men. He saw a third party involved, whom he realized to be the Devil, who was posing as a good-looking, quiet, friendly, innocent mechanic in their town.

Coletti was afraid to say anything. No one believed him, not even his wife, who separated from him. He lost his reputation, image, family, and business, but finally, strengthened by angels, he stood face-to-face with Derek, the mechanic. Matt had to believe, against all innocent appearances, that he was dealing with the Devil and stand up to him. It happened, and the Devil was overcome.

There were several peculiar and exciting parallels to my experience:

- 1) There was crime and intimidation.
- 2) I lost everything in my life, at least “on the books,” if not in reality.
- 3) My wife, in essence, left me and was threatening to part altogether.
- 4) I was afraid to take the stand against Sean.
- 5) I was strengthened by an [angel](#), as was Matt by angels.

The sixth and most poignant parallel to me was dramatically expressed when Matt stood facing the mechanic, who looked just like Sean in spirit and attitude, as if to say, “Who me? I’m innocent!” Matt had to believe what he knew and not what he was seeing. He started, faltered, firmed up, followed through, and got the victory.

I marveled at the parallels and had to conclude that these things were no coincidence, but that God is over all things, including TV, the movie industry, the writers, producers, and actors (which many professing Christians condemn), the timing - everything.

I’ve already [expressed](#) how I believed God was preaching the Gospel to the world by *Star Wars*, without the world or George Lucas or anyone else apparently realizing it.

### Particle - Chris Hafichuk Calls

At midnight of July 23<sup>rd</sup>, [Chris](#) called, angry, bitter, and railing. He said the whole of Archie’s family was devastated by me, and Archie said fourteen years of his life were ruined. We talked for over 2½ hours. I informed him of many things, even the timing of his call (given our circumstances), the sovereignty of God, my past wickedness, God’s judgment on me, His love for them, and the available forgiveness, mercy, and redemption.

I prayed for him and his family, blessed him, offered to help, and expressed my desire that God make things right - restore, reconcile, and bring them into the victory. I knew He’s able to do the impossible.

But where was God? Why wasn’t He there for them? Was I more powerful than He? It seemed Archie worshiped me, not God. Didn’t Archie believe in the Omnipotent God? If I’d been a curse to them, and at this point I won’t deny I was, had Chris no faith in the Scripture that says:

**“As the bird by wandering, as the swallow by flying, so the curse without cause shall not come” (Proverbs 26:2 MKJV)?**

### Particle - Jonathan Prophecies for Marilyn

Today, July 25<sup>th</sup>, was Day 1400. The night before, I dreamt of Marilyn defending, serving, and adoring Sean, while looking at me as if to say, “So what? Who cares?” It was impudence, contempt, and disdain for me. When I related these things to her, she said, “That’s the way it is.”

Marilyn was battling regrets and fears that Sean was leaving, trying to find some way to prevent it. Jonathan came to me saying, “Dad, I think I just had a prophecy,” and whispered it in my ear. “It’s for Mom - *‘Let go of him and peace shall come.’*”

Then the debate came. Who was “him,” Sean or me? If Sean, she would ask how to let him go. I knew I couldn’t answer that for her - it was a matter of the heart, which is beyond methodology or explanation. I recalled how Paul said that if there was a witness from God that he and Kerri were to remain single, they were ready to do so. I suddenly realized Marilyn had to publicly renounce Sean, just as she had publicly chosen him over me as her husband.

### Particle - Chuck Youngbrandt

I was watching one of Evan Yurkoski’s tapes from *The Prophecy Club*, I believe, and the Lord revealed to me that Chuck Youngbrandt was a false prophet. All his prophecies were false and he was inspired by “another Jesus.” His “conversion to Christ” was counterfeit; he was seduced by evil spirits.

Evan informed me that Chuck was laying hands on all people interested and was “sealing the servants of God.” What he was really doing was receiving glory to himself and possibly passing the seductive spirit, by which he prophesied and operated, on to others. I asked Evan if Chuck laid hands on him for this alleged purpose. He said he wanted to go to Calgary that Chuck may do so. I had good reason to believe Evan might receive an evil spirit if he allowed Chuck to lay hands on him. I warned him not to go. I wasn’t at all confident he would listen.

### Particle - Philip Yancey

I finished reading Yancey’s *What’s So Amazing About Grace?* and took many notes. He says some true things, but he’s terribly light on repentance. While he calls for it, his perspective on grace is imbalanced and misinformed. He seems to presume grace is exercised by man, in man’s wisdom, and thus he judges men according to his perceptions, after the appearance. He would not, for example, see God’s grace in Joseph’s brothers at enmity with Joseph.

I’d say Philip only knows Christ after the flesh and therefore condemns the righteousness of God. He has focused on the lack in men of *his* concept of grace. Thus he is self-righteous and judgmental - really quite satanic when it comes down to it, savoring the things of men, not the things of God.

On that note, it’s clear that Yancey is quite popular, choosing man’s ways and righteousness. Men love to have the preeminence over God, and they hate the thought of correction (judgment). Such will suffer great disillusionment.

### Particle - I Call Paul

On July 27, 2000, I called Paul for the first time since 1998. This would turn out to be 105 days or 3½ Hebrew months to November 10<sup>th</sup>.

Understand, I didn’t purposely time it this way; it happened, as with all other timings.

### Particle - Jonathan Unveils His Secret Prophecy

On the night of July 27<sup>th</sup>, as Marilyn, Jonathan, and I drove home, Jonathan decided to divulge the [prophecy](#) he had shared with me some years before. He said, “Mom, Dad is already dead. The Lord has taken him.”

I was surprised. “That’s the prophecy you said I shouldn’t tell?” I asked.

“Yes,” he replied.

“There’s more,” I said. He couldn’t recall. “Can I say more or tell the rest of it?”

“Yes, Dad.”

I continued, “You said that I had died, that part of me was in Heaven and part here” (he had also told me that I was different, and that I would never die).

### **Particle - Marilyn Proposes to Sean**

The mention of Jonathan’s prophecy only gave Marilyn fuel for her agenda. On the morning of July 28<sup>th</sup>, Marilyn called Sean to ask him if she should divorce me, marry him, and the two of them would take over the farm. As the touch of garnish on this creative meal, she asked that I finance them. Sean’s reply was, “It wouldn’t be right.” She dropped the proposal. If he had said, “Yes, let’s,” I have little doubt she would have done it.

Bob arrived with a van to take Sean back with him to Toronto. But here we were, Marilyn desperately trying to find some way to hang on to Sean and, consequently, I was debating if a change was occurring in the circumstances that called for allowing Sean to stay after all. Marilyn was so miserable that I was seriously entertaining letting the farm go with her and letting them do as they pleased. I would walk out of everything and start anew somewhere else altogether. I was also fed up with the Bensons and their constant bickering with one another.

Marilyn wasn’t taking Jonathan’s prophecy of “letting go of him” as applying to Sean, and there was no peace. All others knew full well it meant Sean.

Paul and Kerri were in touch with us from Great Falls. Paul called for the first time since 1998 and firmly declared that Sean should go. He also received a promise from God that he (Paul) would again have the farm.

### **Particle - Final Talk**

On July 29, 2000, Marilyn called Sean. Consequently, Bob and Sean came out to our place. More clearly than ever, it was revealed to me in that talk that Sean demanded his rightness and insisted that all others bow to it, whereas we were called to lay down our “rightness” for those who are wrong.

Sean, Jonathan, and Jonathan’s friend, Jeff Webber, went for a walk to the river, while Bob, Marilyn, and I talked. When they returned after two hours, I asked Sean if he had received anything. He said he knew that it was up to the rest of us and not up to him to change. He also said he heard that “Lois was pure poison” to me. He insisted he should be at the farm, running it, and Marilyn with him.



In our presence, Sean argued with his father and with us. He stubbornly refused to acknowledge any wrongness whatsoever on his part. For the first time, Marilyn said she saw Sean as he was - he had to be right and was intransigent (she had but a glimpse). Out of his own mouth he showed himself plainly, and I knew he had to go. Bob was relieved that his son could come with him; he also marveled at Sean's hardness.

Lois prophesied that Bob didn't know what he was getting himself into and would be calling me for help in the near future. Bob and Sean were opposing substances of unreality, something like constipation and diarrhea, each with his own essence of false love. There would be conflict between them.

This time, without anger, I told Sean he was arrogant, impudent, stubborn, and there was nothing more to be said. When they left, I gave Bob and him a hug. Marilyn was crying. It was hard for me for two reasons: 1) I saw Marilyn's pain for him, and 2) I knew he had died.

Evan Yurkoski happened to drop by as they were leaving. He said he saw the death in Sean. He had things to say to Marilyn, and she admitted she was wrong. Peter Webber, our neighbor, also came by. Peter's wife had [left him](#) years earlier. We all shared rather openly some of what was happening between Marilyn and me. Somehow, it may have helped Peter. He wasn't alone.

Do you recall how Peter Webber and Jonathan had the same birthdate, Peter being about my age, and Peter's son Jeff, being the same age as Jonathan, had the same birthdate as I? Isn't that interesting?

## END OF PART VIII

### COMING NEXT: [PART IX - THE FOURTH DIMENSION, PHASE ONE](#)

*On to a new day and the next phase of victories, but with more trials; more mountains to climb and valleys to descend. And seldom do things unfold as expected.*